This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

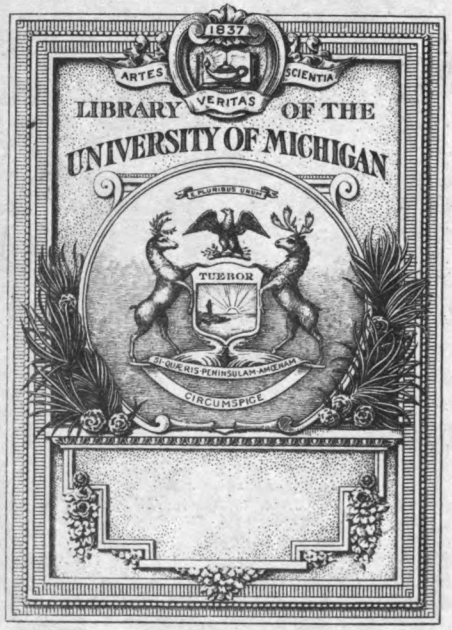
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`



Digitized by Google

828
M42a
1815

1475
v.2

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

828
M42W
1875

WORDSWORTH, SHELLEY, KEATS,

AND

OTHER ESSAYS

Attention Patron:

This volume is too fragile for any future repair.
Please handle with great care.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN LIBRARY-CONSERVATION & BOOK REPAIR

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

828
M42w
1875

WORDSWORTH, SHELLEY, KEATS,

AND

OTHER ESSAYS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

WORDSWORTH, SHELLEY, KEATS,

AND

OTHER ESSAYS.

BY

DAVID MASSON, M.A., LL.D.,

Professor of Rhetoric and English Literature in the University of Edinburgh.

NEW EDITION.

London:
MACMILLAN AND CO.
1875.

[*The Right of Translation and Reproduction is Reserved.*]

Digitized by Google

LONDON
R. CLAY, SONS, AND TAYLOR, PRINTERS,
BREAD STREET HILL.

Digitized by Google

PREFATORY NOTE.

THE first, second, fifth, and sixth of the Essays included in the present volume are reprinted from a volume published by the Author in 1856 under the title *Essays Biographical and Critical: chiefly on English Poets.* The Essays on Shelley and Keats are now added. Two similar volumes of revised Essays will follow; the next of which will be *Chatterton: A Story of the Year* 1770.

EDINBURGH:
April 1874.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

I.

PAGE

WORDSWORTH 1

II.

SCOTTISH INFLUENCE IN BRITISH LITERATURE. 75

III.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF SHELLEY 105

IV.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF KEATS 143

V.

THEORIES OF POETRY 193

VI.

PROSE AND VERSE: DE QUINCEY 255

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

I.

WORDSWORTH.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

ESSAYS.

I.

WORDSWORTH.[1]

ANOTHER great spirit has recently gone from the midst of us. It is now three months since the nation heard, with a deep though quiet sadness, that an aged man of venerable mien, who for fifty years had borne worthily the name of English poet, had at length disappeared from those scenes of lake and mountain where, in stately care of his own worth, he had fixed his recluse abode, and passed forward, one star the more, into the still unfeatured future, whither all that lives is rolling, and whither, as he well knew and believed, the Shakespeares and Miltons, whom men count dead, had but as yesterday transferred their kindred radiance. When the news spread, it seemed as if our island were

[1] *North British Review*, August 1850.—"The Poetical Works of William Wordsworth, D.C.L., Poet Laureate, &c." London, 1849.

Digitized by Google

suddenly a man the poorer, as if some pillar or other notable object, long conspicuous on its broad surface, had suddenly fallen down. It is right, then, that we should detain our thoughts for a little in the vicinity of this event; that, the worldly course of such a man having now been ended, we should stand for a little around his grave, and think solemnly of what he was. Neither few nor unimportant, we may be sure, are the reflections that should suggest themselves over the grave of William Wordsworth.

Of the various mysteries that the human mind can contemplate none is more baffling, and at the same time more charming to the understanding, than the nature of that law which determines the differences of power and mental manifestation between age and age. That all history is an evolution, that each generation inherits all that had been accumulated by its predecessor, and bequeathes in turn all that itself contains to its successor, is an idea to which, in one form or another, science binds us down. But, native as this idea now is in all cultivated minds, with how many facts, and with what a large proportion of our daily speech, does it not still stand in apparent contradiction! Looking back upon the past career of our race, does not the eye single out, as by instinct, certain epochs that are epochs of virtue and glory, and others that are epochs of frivolity

Digitized by Google

and shame? Do we not speak of the age of Pericles in Greece, of the Augustan age in Rome, of the outburst of chivalry in modern Europe, of the noble era of Elizabeth in England, and of the sad decrepitude that followed it? And is there not a certain justice of perception in this mode of speaking? Does it not seem as if all ages were not equally favoured from on high, gifts both moral and intellectual being vouchsafed to one that are all but withheld from another? As with individual men, so with nations and with humanity at large, may not the hour of highest spiritual elevation and sternest moral resolve be nearest the hour of most absolute obliviousness and most profound degradation? Has not humanity also its moods —now brutal and full-acorned, large in physical device, and pregnant with the wit of unconcern; again, touched to higher things, tearful for very goodness, turning an upward eye to the stars, and shivering to its smallest nerve with the power and the sense of beauty? In rude and superficial expression of which fact, have not our literary men coined the commonplace that a critical and sceptical age always follows an age of heroism and creative genius?

These, we say, are queries which, though they may not be answered to their depths, it is still useful to put and ponder. One remark only will we venture in connexion with them. According to one theory, it is a

Digitized by Google

sufficient explanation of these moral and intellectual changes in the spirit of nations to suppose that they take place by a law of mere contagion or propagation from individual to individual. One man of powerful and original nature, or of unusually accurate perceptions, makes his appearance in some central, or, it may be, sequestered spot; he gains admirers or makes converts; disciples gather round him, or try to form an opinion of him from a distance; they, again, in their turn, affect others; till, at last, as the gloom of the largest church is slowly changed into brilliance by the successive lighting of all its lamps, so a whole country may, district by district, succumb to the peculiarity of a new influence! Now, this is perfectly true; and it would be indeed difficult to estimate the amazing efficacy of such a law of incessant diffusion from point to point over a surface. But this mode of representing the fact under notice does not convey the whole truth. Concerning even the silent pestilences, we have been recently taught that they do not wholly depend on transmission from individual to individual, but are rather distinct derangements in the body of the earth itself, tremors among its electricities and imponderables, alterations of the sum-total of those material conditions wherewith human life has been associated. In like manner, as it appears to us, must those streaming processes of sympathy and contagion whereby a moral or

Digitized by Google

intellectual change is diffused over a community be regarded as but the superficial indications of a deep contemporaneous agitation pervading the whole frame of Nature. From the mineral core of this vast world, outwards to the last thoughts, impulses, and conclusions of us its human inhabitants, there runs, as science teaches, a mystic law of intercourse and affinity, pledging its parts to act in concert. The moral and intellectual revolutions of our world, its wars, its new philosophies, its outbursts of creative genius, its profligate sinkings, and its noble recoveries, all must rest, under the decree of supreme wisdom, on a concurrent basis of physical undulations and vicissitudes. When, therefore, a man starts up in any locality, charged with a new spirit or a new desire, there, be sure, the ground around him is similarly affected. New intellectual dispositions are like atmospheres; they overhang whole countries at once. It is not necessarily by communication or plagiarism that the thought excogitated to-day in London breaks out to-morrow in Edinburgh, or that persons in Göttingen and Oxford are found speculating at the same time in the same direction. In our own island, for example, it is a fact capable of experimental verification, that whatever is being thought at any one time in any one spot, is, with a very small amount of difference, being independently thought at the same time in fifty other

Digitized by Google

places at all distances from each other. And yet it is equally true that in every moral or spiritual revolution there is always a leader, a forerunner, a man of originality, in whose individual bosom the movement seems to have been rehearsed and epitomized, and that in the beginning of every such revolution the power of contagion from man to man, and the machinery of the clique, school, or phalanx, must come into play.

These remarks are not too remote or abstract for the present occasion. The nineteenth century is a sufficiently large portion of historic time, England is a sufficiently large portion of the historic earth, and the poetical literature of England, or of any other nation, is a sufficiently important element in that nation's existence, to justify our viewing that remarkable phenomenon, *the Revival of English Poetry in the Nineteenth Century*, in the light of the most extreme general conceptions that can be brought to bear upon it. Against the preceding observations, therefore, as against what seems an appropriate background, let us try to bring out the main features of the phenomenon itself, so far, at least, as these can be exhibited with reference to the life and writings of its most "representative man." And first of Wordsworth regarded historically.

From Dryden till about fifty years ago (*i.e.* till about

Digitized by Google

1800), say our authorities in literary history, was an era of poetical sterility in England. When Coleridge gave lectures in London on the English poets, he divided them into three lists or sections—the first, including all the poets from Chaucer to Dryden; the second, all those from Dryden inclusively to the close of the eighteenth century; and the third, all those of his own generation. The view presented by him of the characters of these three periods, relatively to each other, was essentially that conveyed in the strange theory of alternate ebb and flow, alternate immission and withdrawal of power, as regulating the progress of the universe. In other words, the first period was a period of strength, youth, and outburst; the second was a period of cleverness, conceit, and poverty; and the third was a period of revival. For, the poetic spirit being one constant thing, a certain specific and invariable quality or state of the human soul, not capable of change from century to century, but the same of old, now, and for ever, it follows that the history of poetry can present no other appearance than that of alternate presence and absence, alternate excess and deficiency, alternate extinction and renovation. That is to say—accepting the poetry of Chaucer and Milton as true poetry, we cannot go on to defend the poetry of Pope and Johnson as true poetry of a different kind, and then, coming down to our own

Digitized by Google

age, assert that its poetry is true poetry of a different kind still. Except in a very obvious sense, rendered necessary by convenience, it cannot be said that there are *kinds* of poetry. The materials on which the poetic sense works are constantly varying; infinite, also, are the combinations of human faculty and will with which this sense may be structurally associated; but the sense itself, whensoever and in whomsoever it may be found, is still the same old thing that trembled in the heart of Homer. An age may have it or want it; may have more of it or less of it; may have it in conjunction with this or with that aggregate of other characteristics; but cannot abandon one form of it and take up another.

In these remarks we have embodied a very necessary caution. If much good has been done by that exaltation of meaning which the words Poet and Poetry have received from the hands of Coleridge and others, as well as by their kindred services in distinguishing so constantly and so emphatically between the terms reason and understanding, genius and talent, creation and criticism, we are not quite sure but that, at the same time, this infusion of new conceptions into our language has been productive of some mischief. Agreeing, upon the whole, with the sentence of condemnation which has been of late passed upon part of the poor eighteenth century; believing that it was a critical

Digitized by Google

negative, and unpoetic age; nay, even believing (however the belief is to be reconciled with the doctrine of continuous historic evolution) that it was one of those seasons of comparative diminution of the general vital energy of our species which we have already spoken of:—we still think that too sweeping a use has been made of this notion and its accessories by a certain class of writers. Let us illustrate our meaning by an example. Keats, the poet, and James Mill, the historian of India, were contemporaries. The one, according to the language introduced by Coleridge, was a man of genius; the other was a man of talent. In the soul of Keats, if ever in a human soul at all, there was a portion of the real poetic essence—the real faculty divine; Mr. Mill, on the other hand, had probably as little of the poet in his composition as any celebrated man of his time, but he was a man of hard metal, of real intellectual strength, and of unyielding rectitude. In certain exercises of the mind he could probably have crushed Keats, who was no weakling, as easily as a giant could crush a babe. But, suppose the two men to have sat together on Hampstead Heath in a starry night, which of them would then have been the stronger—which would have known the more ecstatic pulses? Or, to make the case still more decisive, suppose the two men to have been Keats and Aristotle—Keats a consumptive poetic boy, and Aristotle

Digitized by Google

the intellect of half a world. Does not such a contrast bring out the real injustice that has been done to many truly great and good men by the habit which, since the time of Coleridge, has become general, of placing all the men that belong to the so-called category of genius in one united mass above all that rank only in the category of talent? For, though we may grant the reality of some such distinction as is implied between the two substantives, is it not clear that the general mass of mind possessed by a man reputed to belong to the inferior category, and consequently his general power to influence the soul of the world, may exceed a thousand times that possessed by a man of the other? In other words, may not a man rank so high in the one kind that, even though the kind itself be inferior, it may be said with truth that he is a hundred times greater a man than some specified lower man in the other? Practically, the tenor of these remarks is that we are in the present day committing an injustice by following the tendency of our young Coleridgians to restrict the meaning of the quantitative word "greatness" within the limits of the merely qualitative word "genius." And, speculatively, their tenor may be expressed in the proposition that this quality or mode of mind called genius, the poetic sense, creative power, and so on, may exist in association with all possible varieties of intellectual

Digitized by Google

or cerebral vigour, from the mediocrity of a Kirke White or an Anacreon, up to the stupendousness of a Shakespeare. It is thus that, while agreeing in the main with the opinion that from Dryden to the close of the next hundred years was a poetic interregnum, we would still make our peace with those who would fight the battle of the much-abused eighteenth century, and would steer clear of the controversy whether Pope was a poet. As deficiency in poetic power does not imply corresponding deficiency in what may be called ordinary cerebral vigour, so the eighteenth century, though admitted to have been unpoetic, may have been a very respectable century notwithstanding; and, even were we to exclude Pope from the class of poets (which most certainly we would not do), we might still hold him to have been a phenomenon in literature not, on that account, a whit the less remarkable. A deeper analysis would carry us farther into the question as to the connexion between poetic power and general intellect in individuals and in ages; but here we must stop.

Having thus explained in what sense we understand that general assertion regarding the low state of English poetry in the eighteenth century (part of the seventeenth included) with which the name of Wordsworth is irrevocably associated, let us attend a little to the facts of the case. In what did the sterility of English

Digitized by Google

poetry in that age consist, and what words would best describe it? Here Wordsworth himself comes to our aid. The following is from an Appendix to the Preface to the second edition of his *Lyrical Ballads*, published in 1800: the subject under discussion is Poetic Diction:—

"The earliest poets of all nations generally wrote from passion excited by real events; they wrote naturally and as men: feeling powerfully as they did, their language was daring and figurative. In succeeding times, poets, and men ambitious of the fame of poets, perceiving the influence of such language, and desirous of producing the same effect without being animated with the same passion, set themselves to a mechanical adoption of these figures of speech, and made use of them sometimes with propriety, but much more frequently applied them to feelings and thoughts with which they had no natural connexion whatsoever. A language was thus insensibly produced, differing materially from the real language of men in *any situation*. The reader or hearer of this distorted language found himself in a perturbed and unusual state of mind: when affected by the genuine language of passion he had been in a perturbed and unusual state of mind also: in both cases he was willing that his common judgment and understanding should be laid asleep, and he had no instinctive and infallible perception of the true to make him reject the false; the one served as a passport for the other. The emotion was in both cases delightful; and no wonder if he confounded the one with the

Digitized by Google

other, and believed them both to be produced by the same or similar causes. Besides, the poet spake to him in the character of a man to be looked up to, a man of genius and authority. Thus, and from a variety of other causes, this distorted language was received with admiration; and poets, it is probable, who had before contented themselves for the most part with misapplying only expressions which at first had been dictated by real passion, carried the abuse still further, and introduced phrases composed apparently in the spirit of the original figurative language of passion, yet altogether of their own invention, and characterised by various degrees of wanton deviation from good sense and nature. . . . Perhaps in no way, by positive example, could be more easily given a notion of what I mean by the phrase *poetic diction* than by referring to a comparison between the metrical paraphrases which we have of passages in the Old and New Testament and those passages as they exist in our common Translation. . . . By way of immediate example, take the following of Dr. Johnson:—

'Turn on the prudent Ant thy heedless eyes,
Observe her labours, Sluggard, and be wise;
No stern command, no monitory voice,
Prescribes her duties, or directs her choice;
Yet, timely provident, she hastes away
To snatch the blessings of a plenteous day;
When fruitful Summer loads the teeming plain,
She crops the harvest, and she stores the grain.
How long shall sloth usurp thy useless hours,
Unnerve thy vigour, and enchain thy powers?

Digitized by Google

While artful shades thy downy couch enclose,
And soft solicitation courts repose,
Amidst the drowsy charms of dull delight,
Year chases year with unremitted flight,
Till Want now following, fraudulent and slow,
Shall spring to seize thee, like an ambush'd foe.'

From this hubbub of words pass to the original. 'Go to the Ant, thou Sluggard, consider her ways and be wise: which, having no guide, overseer, or ruler, provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest. How long wilt thou sleep, O Sluggard? when wilt thou arise out of thy sleep? Yet a little sleep, yet a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep! So shall thy poverty come as one that travelleth, and thy want as an armed man.'"

To sum up the views thus presented by Wordsworth of the state of English poetry after Milton, it may be said that at that time the nation, having lost much of the genuine poetical power it had formerly possessed, but still preserving a form of composition to which it had been so long and so powerfully accustomed, began to regard the essence of poetry as lying in metre, accompanied by a certain peculiar and artificial phraseology called poetic diction, thus begetting that exaggerated antithesis between poetry and prose with which our language is still infected. Instead of regarding the poetic faculty as consisting in a mode or attitude of the mind, distinguishable, on the one hand, from the scientific

Digitized by Google

mode or attitude, whose function is investigation or exposition, and, on the other hand, from the oratorical mode or attitude, whose function is to excite or stimulate in a particular direction, they made poetry to consist in a mode of language, and they estimated the value of a poet according to the degree of mastery he had attained in the use of this mode of language, and the degree of general mental power and resource he could manifest through it. Hence, in the first place, a gradual increase of departure in metrical composition from the idioms and combinations of words deemed appropriate to prose; and, in the second place, a gradual reduction of the range of metre itself to certain fixed varieties and methods of versification, which the older poets, who did not so much assort their thoughts to rhymes as let the thoughts flow out in their own rhythm, would have disdained as much as a natural cascade would disdain the assistance of pipes. But, while an exaggerated antithesis was thus established between prose and poetry, it by no means followed that a very wide separation was drawn between the devotees of the one and those of the other. Poetry was indeed a different form of diction from prose; but then, as it was not difficult for a clever man to acquire two forms of diction, one might very well be both a poet and a prose-writer! To pass from prose to poetry was but to pass from one's town to one's country house. Hence it

Digitized by Google

was that so many of the literary men of last century had a reputation both in prose and in verse. General mental vigour carried an author triumphantly through either form of composition. Wit, sarcasm, strength, manliness, whatever qualities of intellect or disposition could earn respect for a writer in prose, were all capable —with a little training, or a slight native impulse towards the picturesque, to aid him—of being transfused into metre. The best poetry of the age was, accordingly, rather wit or reflection expressed in metre than real poetry in the strict sense of the word. And here lies the defence of the poets of that time, as well as their condemnation. Of many of them it may be denied that they were poets; but of almost all of them it may be asserted that they were men of general mental vigour. In our disquisitions concerning them, therefore, let not this be forgotten. If Johnson was no poet, he was a very ponderous and noble old sage nevertheless; and even the purists that would clip the laurels of Dryden and Pope must admit that now-a-days we have no such manly *literati* as the former about Leicester Square, and that the other was a diamond of the first water.

But the change came at length. By the mysterious operation of those laws which determine the risings and the sinkings of the mental state of humanity as a whole, there seemed to be effected, towards the close

Digitized by Google

of the eighteenth century, a sudden increase of the vital energy of the species. Humanity assumed a higher mood; a deep agitation, as if from a fresh electric discharge out of celestial space into the solid body of our planet, shook the soul of the world, and left it troubled and excited. The two most conspicuous and extensive manifestations of this heightened state of the world's consciousness were—in the region of speculation, the promulgation of the Transcendental Philosophy in Germany, and, in the region of action, the French Revolution. But, as if the same spirit which burst forth in these two great eruptions also sought vent through smaller and apparently unconnected orifices all over Europe, there were not wanting other significant indications of the change that was taking place. In Germany, seemingly apart from the Transcendental Philosophy, though in reality deriving strength from it through a subterranean conduit, a new Literature came forth, under the care first of Lessing, and then of Goethe. And in our own country, sprinkled over as it had been in spots by the sound and fertile philosophy of Reid, there was a feebler exhibition of the same phenomenon. Even in the age of reputed degeneracy there had been men of the true poetic spark. Dryden and Pope may not have kept it pure, but they assuredly had it; Gray, notwithstanding the dreadful disintegration to which his Elegy

Digitized by Google

has been submitted by modern critics, did certainly possess the ear and sensibility of a poet; Collins and Goldsmith were men of musical hearts; and Thomson, Wordsworth himself being judge, was a genuine child of rural nature. Nor here, whatever other names are left unmentioned, let *him* be forgotten, the boy of Bristol, the drunken choir-singer's posthumous son, who was found dead in his garret in Brooke Street, Holborn, on the 25th of August, 1770. But the real poetic outburst came after these men had been removed from the scene, and was plainly a consequence of that general commotion of the earth to which we have referred. Its earliest unmistakeable signs may be said to have been given in the works of Cowper and Burns. In the bard of Olney, invalid as he was, the new force found an English mind that it could compel to speak for it; and, when the swarthy Scottish ploughman filled the Lowlands with his songs, it was clear that the process of reformation had been completed, as regarded this island, to its last spontaneous results, and that every acre of the British earth had become instinct and pregnant with the novel fire.

Accordingly, this was the period of the birth and training of new English poets. Crabbe, Scott, Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Southey, were children of this period; and in all of them—their peculiar differences allowed for to the utmost—the new spirit was visible.

Digitized by Google

It was assigned to Wordsworth, however, more than to any other man, to be conscious of the fact that such a new spirit had been breathed into the world at all, and to conclude the process of its diffusion through society by bringing into play the powers of theoretical exposition through the press and personal influence over distinguished contemporaries.

Born among the Cumberland hills, in the year 1770—that is, in the year of Chatterton's death—Wordsworth was but eleven years younger than Burns. It is pleasant to think that these two men, though they never met, were near neighbours. From within half a mile of Burns's house at Ellisland, the Cumberland mountains may be seen; and since the days of Drayton the Scottish Scruffel and the English Skiddaw have recognised each other in popular verse. Wordsworth himself, on visiting the land of Burns, called this fact to mind:—

> "Huge Criffel's hoary top ascends,
> By Skiddaw seen,—
> Neighbours we were, and loving friends
> We might have been."

When Burns died, at the age of thirty-seven, Wordsworth was a young man of twenty-six. He had been destined for the Church, and with that view had gone to St. John's College, Cambridge, and taken his degree;

Digitized by Google

but, caught as he had been from the first by the new spirit of song, then hanging most powerfully, as it would seem, over both shores of the Solway, he had already recognised his proper office, and consecrated his life to the Muses. In 1793, the year of the publication by Burns of the fourth edition of his Poems, Wordsworth had given to the world his first productions—two poems in the heroic couplet, entitled, respectively, *An Evening Walk, addressed to a Young Lady*, and *Descriptive Sketches, taken during a pedestrian Tour among the Alps.* These two compositions are slender enough; but how powerful was the impression that they produced on some minds by the peculiarity of their style may be inferred from the following testimony of another youthful poet, who, coming to Cambridge immediately after Wordsworth had left it, naturally took an interest in what his predecessor had done. "During the last year of my residence at Cambridge," says Coleridge, "I became acquainted with Mr. Wordsworth's first publication, entitled *Descriptive Sketches;* and seldom, if ever, was the emergence of an original poetic genius above the literary horizon more evidently announced." It was not till 1796, however, that the two poets became personally known to each other. Like Coleridge, Wordsworth, who had travelled, and resided in France during the fervours of the French Revolution, partook,

Digitized by Google

and in no moderate degree, of the social enthusiasm of the time; and, the two aspirants having gone to live together for a summer in a pleasant retreat on the coast of Somersetshire, their demeanour, as Coleridge informs us in his *Biographia Literaria*, attracted so much local attention that Government was induced to send a spy to watch them. The poor man, however, after dogging them for some weeks in their walks, acquitted them of any disloyal intention, and even became ashamed of his office, feeling sure, as he said, from their continual talking of one *Spy-Nosy*, as they sat together for hours on a sandbank, behind which he lay concealed, that they had detected him, and were making game of him. As Wordsworth's temporary sympathies with the French Revolution may be supposed to have placed him in vital connexion with one of the two great phenomena in which the sudden access of new energy to the human race at that time declared itself, so, we may also suppose, those sea-side conversations of his about *Spy-Nosy* with the "noticeable man with large grey eyes" must have placed him in sufficient connexion with the other phenomenon, the Transcendental Philosophy. Moreover, in 1798, the two friends made a tour together in Germany; and whatever speculative insight was obtained by Coleridge during his whole life was evidently communicated, if not in the form of creed,

Digitized by Google

at least in the form of conception, to the less analytic poet.

In 1798 Wordsworth published his *Lyrical Ballads*; to the second edition of which, printed in 1800, he appended his first prose exposition of those principles on which he professed to write, and to which Coleridge, by the fact of his association with him in the publication (the *Ancient Mariner* appeared in companionship with the *Lyrical Ballads*), virtually gave in his adhesion. Wordsworth's next publication was in 1807, when he printed in two volumes a variety of poems composed in preceding years. Meanwhile he had married, and had retired to his native Lakes, to lead among their quiet beauties the tranquil life he deemed alone suitable to the poetic nature. Southey's subsequent retirement to the same part of the country, and Coleridge's frequent visits to it, gave occasion to the celebrated nickname of the "Lake School," applied to the three poets and their followers. With the exception of a few tours in Scotland and the Continent, and occasional journeys to London, the whole remainder of Wordsworth's long life was spent among the Lakes. Here, in the enjoyment of worldly competence, he walked, boated, wrote, and attended church; hence from time to time he issued his new poems, or collections of poems, accompanied by prefaces or dissertations intended to illustrate their peculiar character;

Digitized by Google

and here, in the bosom of his admiring family, he received the chance visits of such stray worshippers as came privileged with letters of introduction, talking with them in a cold stately way, and not unfrequently (be the truth distinctly spoken) shocking them by the apparent egotism with which he referred to or quoted his own poetry, the inordinate indifference he displayed towards most things besides, the painful rigour with which he exacted from those around him every outward mark of respect and attention, and the seriousness with which he would repeat the most insignificant words that had been uttered in his praise. These particulars regarding the man are already irrevocably before the public in our books of literary gossip, and may not, therefore, be wholly omitted even in a notice dedicated to the poet. But, whatever may have been his bearing in the presence of other men, Wordsworth was modest and cordial in his communion with Nature. And it is thus that we should remember him: not as the pleasant ornament of the social board, lavishing the kind word and the hearty repartee; not as the self-forgetting enthusiast of the hour, burning his way through crowds, and drawing adoration and love in his train; but as he was in his old age, the conscious patriarch of English poesy, the grey-haired and hard-featured recluse, shunning the haunts of men, yet with a benevolent hand for the familiar woes of the neighbourhood which knew

Digitized by Google

and honoured him, accustomed to walk alone by day amid the woods, to pace muttering by the ripple of a lake in the moonlight, or, standing half way up a mountain, to turn his unearthly eye towards the heaven of stars. Such he was through all the turmoil of a generation into which, almost alone of his coevals, he had lived to advance; and such he was till, in his eighty-first year, death took him.

The nature of the revolution effected by Wordsworth in the state of English poetry will be best understood by attending to the exact tenor of certain propositions advanced and illustrated by him in his various Prefaces and Dissertations between 1800 and 1820. On these propositions, as supplementary to his general critical onslaught on the poetry of the previous age, he may be supposed to have rested his claims to be considered not only a poet, but also the father of a new poetical era.

Poetry, according to Wordsworth, "takes its origin from emotion recollected in tranquillity:" what the poet chiefly does, or ought to do, is to represent, out of real life, scenes and passions of an affecting or exciting character. Now, men originally placed in such scenes use a nervous and exquisite language, expressly adapted for the occasion by Nature herself; and the poet, therefore, in imitating such scenes or passions, will recall them more vividly in proportion as he can

Digitized by Google

succeed in employing the same language. Only one consideration should operate to make him modify that language: the consideration, namely, that his business as a poet is to give pleasure. All such words or expressions, therefore, as, though natural in the original transaction of a passionate scene, would be unpleasant in its poetic rehearsal, must be omitted. Pruned and weeded in accordance with this negative rule, any description of a moving occurrence, whether in prose or verse, would be true poetry. But, to secure still more perfectly their great end of giving pleasure while they excite emotion, poets have devised the artificial assistance of metre or verse. The *rationale* of the use of metre consists in this, that it provides for the reader or hearer a succession of minute pleasurable surprises, apart from, and independent of, the emotion produced by the matter for which it is the vehicle. A prose version of a passionate story, though, if well managed, it would not be so painful as the original transaction, and might even be pleasurable, would still in many cases be sufficiently painful to prevent its being read more than once. But, by narrating the same in metre, the poet is able, as it were, cunningly to administer a series of doses of pleasure, artificially prepared, which, though not very perceptible, are still sufficient, by mingling with the current of the meaning, to attemper and sweeten its effects. And rhyme is a still higher

Digitized by Google

form of the same device. The necessities, therefore, of metre and rhyme do oblige certain departures in poetry from the primary language of emotion; but, with allowance for these, good poetic diction should still approach very near to the language of real life.

This view, so useful as an attack upon the florid diction of the poets of the preceding age, certainly errs by exaggeration. Wordsworth's own poetry will not stand to be tried by it; for, as Coleridge has shown, there is hardly a verse, even in his most simple productions, that does not deviate from the so-called language of real life. And it must inevitably be so. For, in the first place, the mere application of the negative principle of modification laid down by Wordsworth would amount to an abandonment of the point at issue. Remove all that would be poetically unpleasant from the language of real passion in humble life—the bad grammar, the incoherence, the mispronunciations, and so on; and the language that would then be left for the poet would be a very rare and select language indeed, existing literally nowhere throughout the community, but purely supposititious and ideal, the sap and flower of all popular expression. So also with the representation of passions of a higher order. The only sense in which the language of a great part of our best poetry can be said to resemble real language is that it is the kind of language that

Digitized by Google

a few of the most cultured persons of the community would employ on very rare and impressive occasions. But even the choicest spontaneous language of the best minds when most nobly moved in real life must undergo modification before it can be used by the poet. And, though Wordsworth has provided for such modification, by laying down the positive principle that the poet is at all times to remember that it is his office to give pleasure, and by pointing out the operation of this principle as regards metre and rhyme, yet he does not seem to have seen the whole energy of this principle as determining and compelling departures from common usage. His argument for the virtual identity of poetic language and the language of real life reminds one of the mania for what is called a simple conversational style. Why do not men write as they speak? Why do they not convey their meaning in books in the good racy English which they employ at the dinner-table, or when giving their household orders? Such are the absurd questions that are asked every day. It never seems to enter into the minds of these people that conversation is one thing, public speaking another, and writing a third; that each involves and requires a distinct setting of the faculties for its exercise; that in passing from one to either of the others certain powers must be called into play that were before at rest, or sent to rest that were

Digitized by Google

before in play; and that, accordingly, to demand the perpetual use of a conversational style is to insist that there shall never be anything greater in the world than what conversation can generate. But a world thus restricted to the merely conversational method of literary production would fall into decrepitude. When a man talks with his friend, he is led on but by a few trains of association, and finds a straggling style natural for his purposes; when he speaks in public, the wheels of thought glow, the associative processes by which he advances become more complex, and hence the roll, the cadence, the precipitous burst; and, lastly, when he writes, still other conditions of thought come into action, and there arises the elaborate sentence, winding like a rivulet through the meadow of his subject, or the page jewelled with a thousand allusions. Precisely so in the matter more immediately under discussion. Here, too, there is a gradation. A man in a state of excitement talks in vivid language, and even sets his words to a rough natural music, his voice swelling or trembling with its burthen, though falling short of song. But in the literary repetition of a scene Nature suggests a new set of proprieties, answering to the entire difference between the mind in the primary and the mind in the secondary attitude; and a literal report would be found to defeat the very end in view, and to be as much out of place

Digitized by Google

as a literal copy in painting. Even in prose narration there must be a more select and coherent language than served in the primary act of passion, as well as a more melodious music. And when moved to a still higher flight, the story lifts itself into metre—availing itself of a device sanctioned by an origin in some of the more splendid moments of the ancient human soul—then, in exchange for certain advantages, it submits to restrictions that come along with them. Finally, if the charm of rhyme be desired, this too must be purchased by farther and inevitable concessions. Thus, we repeat, there is a gradation. In prose narration language is conditioned by a more complex set of necessities than in actual experience; in metrical narration the conditions are more complex still, so that, if the speech were of marble before, there must now be speech of jasper; and, lastly, in rhyme the conditions compel the thought through so fine a passage that the words it chooses must be opals and rubies. Nor in all this is there any departure from nature. On the contrary, it is a fine provision that, where the ordinary resources even of musical prose are apt to fail, the mind should have more intense methods of production in reserve. Such methods are metre and rhyme. They do not impair the work of intellectual invention, but rather assist it, and render it capable of a more exquisite class of performances.

Digitized by Google

than would otherwise be possible. In prose, however musical, the meaning flows easily over a level, obeying the guidance of its own associations; in metre new associations are added, which, while they increase the difficulty, also stimulate the intellect to higher reaches; and, when with this is conjoined rhyme, or the obligation of conducting the already moving thought in the direction or towards the horizon of a certain possible number of preconceived sounds, then every fibre of the mind is alert, the whole strength of the household is in action, and things are done that surprise the gods.

Although there seems to be no doubt that the vehement opposition that greeted Wordsworth on his appearance as a poet was determined largely by a perception on the part of the public of those weaknesses in his theory to which we have been alluding, it seems plain also that much of it was a mere display of that instinct of indignation which seizes men when they see their household deities attacked.

"'Pedlars,' and 'boats,' and 'waggons!' Oh! ye shades
Of Pope and Dryden, are we come to this?"

Such was the universal feeling of the critics. The controversy between the *Edinburgh Review* and Wordsworth was literally a contest between the old and the new; in which, however, the old derived certain advan-

Digitized by Google

tages from the obstinacy and want of tact with which the new exposed and made a boast of its most galling peculiarities. For, if Jeffrey's criticisms on Wordsworth's poetry be now compared with the criticisms of Wordsworth's own friend Coleridge, as published in the *Biographia Literaria*, it will be found that, immeasurably as the two critics differ in spirit—the one refusing to admit Wordsworth to be a good poet at all, the other considering him to be the greatest English poet since Milton—there is still an almost perfect coincidence in their special objections to his style. What Jeffrey attacked was chiefly the alleged childishness of much of Wordsworth's language, the babyism of his "Alice Fells," with their cloaks of "duffle grey," &c.; and it is precisely on these points that Coleridge, even while aware of his friend's more profound reason for such familiarities, expresses his dissent from him. The truth is, had Wordsworth been a man of more innate energy, more tremendousness, as a poet, he would have effected the revolution that was necessary with less delay and opposition. Wrapping up his doctrinal peculiarities, if he had had any, in the midst of his poetry, instead of protruding them in a preface, he would have blasted the old spirit out by the mere infatuation of the new, and wound resistless hands in the hair of the nation's instincts. But, instead of being the Mirabeau of the literary revolu-

Digitized by Google

tion, hardly aware of his own propositions, he was, as it were, its Robespierre, who first threw his propositions tied in a bunch into the crowd before him, and then fought his way pertinaciously to where they fell. Even thus (and there were doubtless advantages in this method too) he at length obtained success. The "This will never do" with which Jeffrey introduced his criticism of the *Excursion* proved a false augury. Slowly and reluctantly the nation came round to Wordsworth; and, if there are still many that believe in his defects and shortcomings, all admit him to have been a true poet, and a man of rare genius. Of the poets that have appeared in England since he began his course—Byron, Shelley, Keats, Tennyson, and others—there is not one that does not owe something to his example and influence. Not that these men would not have been poets even had Wordsworth never lived. Through them, too, the new spirit would infallibly in any case have asserted itself; and, as it is, there has been in each of them something individual and original, which has caught portions of the new spirit that even the soul of Wordsworth did not, and been made capable thereby of perfectly specific work. A Nestor may be the patriarch of the camp, but even his deeds may be, in the end, outdone by the exploits of younger heroes. Of all the poets that have succeeded Wordsworth, the one who stands most in the position of revolt against

Digitized by Google

him is Byron. The Byronic in poetry is, in some respects, the contradictory of the Wordsworthian. And believing that Byron was also a great poet, and that through him there were poured into our age elements of grandeur and power that were wanting in Wordsworth, and yet were needed, one would willingly go on to consider historically the appearance of this other tendency in our literature, known as the Byronic, and to show how the two tributaries became at length united. It is time, however, to leave the historical part of our subject, and direct our attention more expressly to the qualities of Wordsworth as a poet.

That Wordsworth was a true poet, that he did possess the "inherent glow," the "vision and faculty divine," no one that has ever read a page of his writings can honestly deny. Coleridge, in whose vocabulary the word "imagination" stood for the poetic faculty *par excellence*, pronounced Wordsworth to be, in imaginative power, "the nearest of all modern writers to Shakespeare and Milton." This estimate may be opposed by some as too high; but, if we keep in view the precise sense attached by Coleridge to his words, it will be difficult to lower it very much. Nor, in accepting such a judgment, is it necessary to have any profound theory as to the nature of this so-called imaginative or poetic faculty which we then assert him to possess. It is

Digitized by Google

sufficient if we know it when we see it, or if we feel the force of any of those numerous synonyms and circumlocutions by which poets and analysts (Wordsworth himself amongst others) have sought to describe it. For, as some think, we define such terms best when we rave about them, adhering to no one form of expression, but supplementing the defects of all possible conception by the vagueness and the force of sound. Perhaps the phrase which, if fully apprehended, would best convey the notion of what is meant by imagination as the faculty of the poet, would be the phrase "creative energy." For this phrase would carry with it one very essential discrimination—the discrimination, namely, of the poetic faculty, as such, both from that passive sensibility by which the mind, presenting a photographic surface to the universe, receives from it impressions of whatever is, and also from that minor and more ordinary exercise of activity by which the mind, sitting thereafter amid these received impressions, recollects, registers, and compares them. What the imaginative or poetic faculty does is something beyond this, and is more akin to the operation of that original cosmic power at whose fiat the atoms and the elements sprang first together. A certain accumulation of material, a certain assemblage of impressions, or mental objects, being supplied by the consciousness, and lying there ready, it is the part of this faculty to

Digitized by Google

discharge into them a *self* that shall fuse them into a living whole, capable of being contemplated with pleasure. This—the *poiesis* or creation of new unities, the information of mere knowledge with somewhat of the spirit of the knower, the incorporation of diverse impressions and recollections by the combining flash of a specific mental act—is the function of the imagination. Now, as all men possess this faculty in some degree, and as in the generation of all the higher species of thought or action it must be present in a very large degree, by whatever names such species of thought or action are called, it is only in a certain supreme sense that imagination is set apart in all languages as the proper faculty of poets. Yet there is reason in this. Poets pre-eminently are men that breathe their own spirit into things, that make self dominate over what is distinct from self, that give out into the universe more than they receive from it. So in Goethe's lines on the poet—

"Wherewith bestirs he human spirits?
Wherewith makes he the elements obey?
Is't not the stream of song that out his bosom springs,
And to his heart the world back coiling brings?"

That is, the stream of song, or self, flowing forth from the poet's heart into the world of phenomena, entwines itself there with this and with that portion of matter

Digitized by Google

or experience, and then flows back to whence it came, coiling what it has captured along with it. This power, this overflowing of self upon the universe, so characteristic of the poet, appears most of all in his eye. The eyes of some men are dull and obtuse; those of others are sharp and piercing, as if they shot their power out in lines; the eyes of the poet are heavy-laden and melancholy, like pools continually too full.

However we may choose to vary the words that are taken to define the essential faculty of the poet, we shall find that they apply to Wordsworth. Every page of his poetry abounds with instances of imagination. Thus, from the *Excursion*—

> "Some tall crag
> That is the eagle's birth-place, or *some peak*
> *Familiar with forgotten years*, that shows
> Inscribed upon its visionary sides,
> The history of many a winter-storm,
> Or obscure record of the path of fire."

Or from *Peter Bell*—

> "And he had trudged through Yorkshire dales,
> Among the rocks and winding scars;
> Where deep and low *the hamlets lie*
> *Beneath their little patch of sky,*
> *And little lot of stars.*"

Or from *Intimations of Immortality from Recollection of Childhood*—

Digitized by Google

"Our birth is but a sleep and a forgetting:
The Soul that rises with us, our life's star,
Hath had elsewhere its setting,
And cometh from afar:
Not in entire forgetfulness,
And not in utter nakedness,
But trailing clouds of glory do we come
From God who is our home:
Heaven lies about us in our infancy!
Shades of the prison-house begin to close
Upon the growing Boy;
But he beholds the light, and whence it flows—
He sees it in his joy;
The Youth, who daily further from the east
Must travel, still is Nature's priest,
And by the vision splendid
Is on his way attended;
At length the Man perceives it die away,
And fade into the light of common day."

These, and hundreds of other passages that might be quoted, show that Wordsworth possessed, in a very high degree indeed, the true primary quality of the poet—imagination; a surcharge of personality or vital spirit, perpetually overflowing among the objects of the otherwise conditioned universe, and refashioning them according to its pleasure.

If we proceed now to inquire what were the most prominent of those other characteristics which, acting and re-acting with this generic tendency in the economy of Wordsworth's mind, determined the specific pecu-

Digitized by Google

liarities of his poetical productions, we are sure to be impressed first of all by his extreme sensibility to, and accurate acquaintance with, the changing phenomena of external nature. It is a just complaint against civilization, as that word is at present defined, and especially against life in cities, that men are thereby shut out, or rather shut in, from sources of sensation the most pure and healthy of any. That people should know something of the aspects of the earth they live on; that they should be familiar with the features of at least a portion of its undisguised surface, with its rocks, its woods, its turf, its hills, as seen in the varying lights of day and night, and the varying livery of the seasons: this, it may be said, was clearly intended to be for ever a part of the mere privilege of existence. But a large proportion of mankind have been obliged to let slip even this poor item of their right in being. Pent up, on the one hand, in their cares against starvation, and, on the other, in their devices for artificial comfort, men have ceased to regard, with the same true intimacy as of old, the venerable face of their ancient mother. Certain great admonitions of the outward, indeed, will always remain with men wheresoever they pass their days—the overarching sky, the midnight winds, the sea's expanse, the yellow cornfield, the wooded landscape. And, after all, these are the images of nature that have most power to stir and affect us:

Digitized by Google

these, of which not even cities can deprive us. Cities, too, have their own peculiar kinds of scenery, of which, and especially of their nocturnal aspects, enough has not yet been made. Thus, in Keats's *Lamia*—

> "As men talk in a dream, so Corinth all,
> Throughout her palaces imperial,
> And all her populous streets and temples lewd,
> Mutter'd, like tempest in the distance brew'd,
> To the wide-spreaded night above her towers."

But of the rural *minutiæ* of Nature, and also of what may be called her aspects of the horrible and lonesome, most of us, above all if we are denizens of cities, are compelled to be ignorant. Very few, for example, can tell the names of the various forest trees, or distinguish them from each other; and fewer still can recognise, either by name or association, the various wild-flowers that grow in the meadows. How much also of sympathy with nature have we not lost by not knowing, with the shepherd or husbandman, the signs of the weather: what the clouds say when they hurry so, what mean those motions of the cattle, and why the mists roll down the hills? And then, in the more special region of phenomena to which we have referred, who among us experience, save by rare chance, the realities of those scenes so telling in books of fiction—the dark and solitary moor with the light glimmering in the distance, the fearful bivouac in the

Digitized by Google

depths of a wood, or the incessant breaking of the waves at midnight against the cliff-embattled shore?

Now, it is a curious fact that one of the most characteristic features of that revolution in English poetry with which the name of Wordsworth is associated has been the increased interest that it has both instinctively aroused and knowingly cultivated in the facts and appearances of material nature. If, as Wordsworth himself has said, hardly a new original image or description of nature was introduced into English verse in the age between Milton and Thomson, our recent poets have certainly retrieved the neglect. "Nature, nature," has been their cry; and as Bacon, after his lordly fashion of thought, fancied that it was of service to his health and spirits to inhale every morning the smell of freshly-ploughed earth into which he had poured wine, so they have interpreted literally their prescriptions to the same effect, by renewing as often as possible their acquaintance with the rural earth, and falling periodically on the turf, as it were, with their faces downwards. In particular, it must have been remarked what an increased familiarity our recent poets have contracted with the botanical department of nature. Chaucer himself could hardly have described the beauties of a field or a garden more minutely than some of our modern versifiers. Nor among the poets that have helped to cultivate this delight in the obser-

Digitized by Google

vation of natural appearances is there anyone that deserves to be ranked before Wordsworth. A native of scenes celebrated for their loveliness, he seems to have been endowed from the first with a capacity to feel and appreciate their benignant influence. In one of the few fragments that have been yet given to the world of his unpublished poem, *The Prelude*, he thus describes his sympathy with nature in childhood:—

"In November days,
When vapours rolling down the valleys made
A lonely scene more lonesome; among woods
At noon; and 'mid the calm of summer nights,
When, by the margin of the trembling lake,
Beneath the gloomy hills, homeward I went
In solitude, such intercourse was mine:
Mine was it in the fields, both day and night,
And by the waters, all the summer long.
And in the frosty season, when the sun
Was set, and, visible for many a mile,
The cottage windows through the twilight blazed,
I heeded not the summons: happy time
It was indeed for all of us; for me
It was a time of rapture! . . . Shod with steel
We hissed along the polished ice, in games
Confederate, imitative of the chase
And woodland pleasures—the resounding horn,
The pack loud chiming, and the hunted hare.
So through the darkness and the cold we flew,
And not a voice was idle: with the din
Smitten, the precipices rang aloud;

Digitized by Google

The leafless trees and every icy crag
Tinkled like iron; while far distant hills
Into the tumult sent an alien sound
Of melancholy, not unnoticed, while the stars,
Eastward, were sparkling clear, and in the west
The orange sky of evening died away."

This intimacy with the face of the earth, this rich and keen sense of pleasure in English nature, whether in her vernal or her wintry aspects, Wordsworth carried with him into manhood. Submitting it, together with all else that he knew of himself, to his judgment for examination, he seems even to have arrived at a theory that it is essential for every poet that would peacefully possess his faculty in these modern times to connect himself permanently and domestically with some appropriate spot or tract of scenery, the whole influence of which he may thoroughly exhaust and incorporate with his verse. At least, in his own case, some such general conviction appears to have blended with the mere sentiment of local attachment, which was doubtless strong in him, in determining his retirement to the Lakes. There are even traces, we fancy, of a disposition on his part to generalize the feeling still more, and to lay it down as a maxim that, in all ordinary cases, the natal spot of every human being is the appropriate spot of his activity through life, removal from which must injure him, and that, so far as our

Digitized by Google

present social arrangements render this impossible, and our present facilities for locomotion render the reverse easy, so far we fall short of the ideal state of things. In the abeyance of this law (hard law for many!) lay, he seems to have felt, one of the great uses of descriptive poetry. While men do tear themselves away from their native localities, and traverse the earth, or congregate in cities, descriptive poetry, he persuaded himself, must ever possess a refreshing and medicinal virtue. It was one of his most valued claims, therefore, that he should be considered a genuine English descriptive poet. And certainly this is a claim that even those who think most humbly of his attainments cannot deny him. There would be a propriety, we think, in remembering Wordsworth as a descriptive poet along with Chaucer and Thomson, thus distinguishing him both from such poets as Burns and Tennyson, on the one hand, and from such poets as Keats on the other. In such poets as Burns and Tennyson, the element of what may be called *human reference* is always so decided that, though no poets describe nature more beautifully when they have occasion, it would still be improper to speak of them specially as descriptive poets. To borrow a distinction from the sister art, it may be said that, if Burns and Tennyson are more properly classed with the figure-painters, notwithstanding the extreme beauty and finish

Digitized by Google

of their natural backgrounds, so, on the same principle, Wordsworth, whose skill in delineating the human subject is also admitted, may yet not erroneously be classed with the landscape-painters. On the other hand, he differs from poets like Keats in this, that, being a native of the country, and accustomed therefore to the appearances of rural nature in all seasons, he does not confound Nature with Vegetation. In the poetry of Keats, as all must feel, there is an excess of merely botanical imagery; in reading his descriptions we seem either to breathe the air of a hothouse, heavy with the moist odours of great-leafed exotics, or to lie full-stretched at noon in some shady nook in a wood, rank underneath with the pipy hemlock, and kindred plants of strange overgrowth. In Wordsworth, as we have seen, there is no such unhealthy lusciousness. He has his spots of thick herbage and his banks of florid richness too; but what he delights in is the broad, clear expanse, the placid lake, the pure pellucid air, the quiet outline of the mountain.

The second characteristic of Wordsworth's poetry to which we would call attention is the general intellectual vigour it displays, the large amount of really excellent thought that is bedded in it—thought that would have been valuable to the world in whatever form it had been put forth, and which might easily, had Wordsworth not been a poet, have been put forth otherwise

Digitized by Google

than in metre. We have already asserted, with sufficient distinctness, that poetry is something essentially different from thought or proposition put into verse. A man may carry in his head a quantity of thought sufficient to set up a university, or to supersede a British Association, and yet be no poet. Or, on the other hand, a man may have something of the poetic spark in him, and be an intellectual weakling. It remains true, nevertheless, that intellect, or thought—clear, large intellect, such as would be available for any purpose whatever; deep, abundant thought, such as we find in the best philosophical writings—is essential towards forming a great poet. This intellect of the poet may either exert itself in such a state of perfect diffusion through the rest of his mind in its creative act as only to become manifest in the completed grandeur of the result—which is the case, for example, with the poetry of Homer and Milton; or it may retain its right to act also as a separate organ for the secretion of pure matter of thought—which is the case with the poetry of Shakespeare. In Wordsworth's poetry the presence of a superior intellect—an intellect strong, high, and subtle, if not of extreme dimensions—may be discovered by both of these tests. In the first place, the substance of his poetry, its logical compactness, and its entire freedom from mere commonplace, prove that a powerful and scholarly mind must

Digitized by Google

have presided over the work of production. On the other hand, for proofs that Wordsworth was familiar, even formally, with the best philosophical ideas of his time, one needs only to dip into his *Excursion*, or any other of his severer poems. Thus, in the following passage, short as it is, the metaphysical reader will discern a perfect mastery, on the part of the poet, over a conception the power of grasping which is recognised in the schools as the one test of a mind capable of metaphysical studies:—

> "My voice proclaims
> How exquisitely the individual Mind
> (And the progressive powers perhaps no less
> Of the whole species) to the External world
> Is fitted:—and how exquisitely too—
> Theme this but little heard of among men—
> The External world is fitted to the Mind;
> And the Creation (by no lower name
> Can it be called) which they with blended might
> Accomplish—this is our high argument."

This and similar conceptions of a very high metaphysics were evidently as familiar to Wordsworth as they were to Coleridge, from whom, it is very probable, he may have originally derived some of them. Indeed, if we make due allowance for the necessary difference between the scientific and the poetic mode of presenting truths, it may be alleged that there is hardly

Digitized by Google

a notion of any generality put forth by Coleridge, whether in psychology, theology, politics, or literary criticism, some recognition of which may not be discovered either in the poems or in the prose dissertations of Wordsworth. The agreement between the two men intellectually seems to have been complete in almost every particular. Both professed political Conservatism; both conducted their speculative reasonings to a point where they merged in belief in Divine Revelation, and in a system of tenets derived from that belief, not differing essentially from theological orthodoxy; and both exhibited an ardent attachment to the forms and rules of the Church of England. It may even be questioned by a certain class of critics whether Wordsworth, in his treatment of such matters, has not sometimes taken leave of the poetical mood altogether, and assumed the mood of the preacher; whether the didactic fit did not sometimes overcome him in his poetry, and whether he has not allowed the controversial spirit, so manifest in his prefaces, to run over also somewhat deleteriously into his verse.

As distinct from the general intellectual excellence of Wordsworth's productions, we have to notice, farther, their singularly calm, religious, and contemplative tone. By thoughtfulness or contemplativeness we usually mean something quite distinguishable from mere intellectual vigour or opulence. The French are an intel-

Digitized by Google

lectual nation; they think rapidly and powerfully; but they do not answer to our notion of a thoughtful or contemplative people. Contemplativeness, according to our usage of the word, does not so much imply the power of attaining or producing thought as the power of brooding sentimentally over thought already attained. If we first oppose the speculative to the active, and then make a farther distinction between the speculative and the contemplative, the character of Hamlet in Shakespeare may be taken to represent the union of the speculative and the contemplative. The Prince is a student from the university, daring into all questions, and fertile at every moment in new generalities and pregnant forms of expression; but his peculiarity consists in this, that far back in his mind there lie certain permanent thoughts and conceptions, towards which he always reverts when left alone, and from which he has ever to be roused afresh when anything is to be done. Now it is this tendency to relapse into a few favourite and constitutional trains of thought that makes the contemplative character. Nor is it difficult to see in what thought it is, above all others, that the contemplative mind will always find its most appropriate food. Birth, death, the future; the sufferings and misdeeds of man in this life, and his hopes of a life to come; the littleness of us and our whole sphere of knowledge, and the awful relations in which we stand

Digitized by Google

to a world of the supernatural—these, if any, are the permanent and inevitable objects of human contemplation and solicitude. From age to age these thoughts have been handed down; every age must entertain, and no age can conclude, them. What the ancient Chaldean meditated as he lay at night under the stars of the desert, the same things does the modern student meditate as he paces his lonely room. "Man, that is born of woman, is of few days and full of trouble;" "How can a man be justified with God?" "O that one might plead for a man with God as a man pleadeth for his neighbour!"—amid all the changes of manners, dynasties, and races, these thoughts survive. They, and such like, are the peculiarly human thoughts, the thoughts of humanity as such, the thoughts upon which mankind must always fall back, and compared with which all other thoughts are but intrusions and impertinences. Now, although it would be possible to show that the effect even of abstract speculation, if carried far enough, is to lead men back into these thoughts and keep them there, so that in this sense the most speculative men must, as if by compulsion, become profoundly contemplative, yet for general purposes a distinction may be drawn between men who are speculative and men who are contemplative in their tendencies. Some men are always active intellectually, always engaged in some

Digitized by Google

process of inquiry and ingenuity—inventing a machine, scheming a project, discovering a law of mind or matter. These men are, in the present sense, speculative men; they are continually at work *within* the ascertained sphere of human activity; and it is by the labours of such men that the mass of this world's experience of its own self-contained capabilities has been accumulated. But there are other men who, either without being mentally active in this way, or besides being thus active, have a constitutional tendency at all times to fall into a musing attitude, to relapse, as we have already expressed it, into certain ancient and footworn trains of thought that lead apparently nowhither. These are the contemplative men. They are the men whose favourite position is rather at the circumference of the known sphere than within it, the men who, at whatever time they may be born, receive, cherish, and transmit the permanent and characteristic thoughts of the human race. This quality of contemplativeness is always associated in our minds with the idea of sadness, tearfulness, melancholy. The patriarch Isaac, of whom we are told that he went out into the fields to meditate at eventide, seems, in our fancy, the most mild and pensive of the characters of Scripture. And such men are the salt of the earth. There may be little originality, indeed, in the thoughts that form the appropriate food of the

Digitized by Google

contemplative mind. To realize the conception "All flesh is grass," or the conception "Why do the wicked prosper?" seems but a very small effort of the intellect, by no means comparable to the effort required in almost every act of daily life. Nevertheless, it remains true that it is only out of a deep soil of such old and simple conceptions that any kind of true human greatness can rear itself, and also that there are very few minds indeed, in these days of ours, over which these and similar conceptions have their due degree of power. It is accordingly one of the chief merits of Wordsworth that in him this reference to the supernatural, this disposition to interpret all that is visible in the spirit of a conviction of its evanescence, did exist in a very high and unusual measure. He was essentially a pensive or contemplative man, one who was perpetually recurring to those few extreme thoughts and conceptions which most men never care to reach, and beyond which no man can go. This, which was conspicuous in the very aspect of his countenance, and which his recluse life illustrated, he has himself explicitly asserted.

"On man, on nature, and on human life,
Musing in solitude, I oft perceive
Fair trains of imagery before me rise,
Accompanied by feelings of delight
Pure, or with no unpleasing sadness mixed;
And I am conscious of affecting thoughts
And dear remembrances, whose presence soothes

Digitized by Google

Or elevates the mind, content to weigh
The good and evil of our mortal state.'
To these emotions, whencesoe'er they come,
Whether from breath of outward circumstance,
Or from the soul—an impulse to herself—
I would give utterance in numerous verse."

It is the blending in Wordsworth of this contemplative tendency with so much general vigour of intellect that has earned for him the name of the English Philosophical Poet. It ought to be observed, at the same time, that in all Wordsworth's contemplative poetry the influence of Christian doctrine is plainly discernible. His meditations on Man, Nature, and the Future, are not those of a Pagan sage, however his language may sometimes consist even with a lofty Pagan view of the universe: on the contrary, he seems to think throughout as one in whose manner of transacting those great and paramount conceptions that form the necessary matter of all real contemplation that sweet modification had been wrought which Christianity has rendered possible.

One of the results of Wordsworth's naturally pensive disposition, left to expatiate as it chiefly was among the objects of a retired and pastoral neighbourhood, was that it gave him a specially keen and sympathetic eye for the characteristic miseries of rural life. We do not think that he was the man that could

Digitized by Google

"hang
Brooding above the fierce confederate storm
Of sorrow barricadoed evermore
Within the walls of cities;"

but no man better than he could

"hear Humanity in fields and groves
Pipe solitary anguish."

In pathetic stories of humble rural life we know no poet superior to Wordsworth. All the ordinary and, if we may so speak, parochial woes of rural existence in England seem to have been diligently noted and pondered by him. It is told of Burns by Dugald Stewart that, as they were walking together one morning in the direction of the Braid Hills, near Edinburgh, where they commanded a prospect of the adjacent country, the poet remarked that the sight of so many smoking cottages gave a pleasure to his mind which he did not believe anyone could understand that did not know, as he did, how much of real worth and happiness such poor habitations might contain. Now, if the glance with which Wordsworth, in his poetry, looks abroad on the cottage-sprinkled scenery of his native district cannot be said to show that warm familiarity with the daily tenor of humble rustic life which Burns had from experience, it may at least be compared to the kindly glance of some pious and diligent pastor, such

Digitized by Google

as Wordsworth has himself described in his *Excursion*, surveying from a height the scattered homes of his well-known parishioners. At home in the parsonage there are books, pictures, and a piano, the care of a gentle wife or daughters; in walking over the fields, too, the pastor, an academic and cultured man, has necessarily thoughts and enjoyments of his own; nevertheless, what he has seen and known of the habits of those among whom he labours has given him an eye to perceive, and a heart to appreciate, their lowliest anxieties and sorrows. Almost exactly so it is with Wordsworth. The incidents of rural life that he delights to depict are precisely those that would arouse the interest and occupy the attention of some good clergyman, active in his duties, and accustomed to store up in his memory the instructive annals of his parish. The death of a poor seduced girl, the return of a disabled soldier to his native village, the wreck of the fortunes of a once thriving family, the solitude of aged widowhood, the nightly moanings of a red-cloaked maniac haunting some dreary spot in the woods—nothing can exceed the pathos with which Wordsworth can tell such simple local stories as these. One can hardly read without tears some of his narratives of this kind: for example, the poem entitled *Guilt and Sorrow*, the pastoral entitled *Michael*, or the tale of the widow Margaret and her lonely cottage as told in the

Digitized by Google

first book of the *Excursion*. Showing a similar eye for the moral picturesque in humble rural life, though altogether of a more cheerful character, is the hearty tale of the *Waggoner*, perhaps one of the most perfect of all Wordsworth's compositions. And here we may remark that, if Wordsworth had any such theory as we have supposed as to the advantage, in the poetical occupation, of a permanent connexion of the poet with some one spot or district, then, in such a theory, he must necessarily have had respect as well to the power of familiar modes of life to form the heart of the poet as to the influence of familiar scenery in attuning his imagination. And certainly there is much in this. Rarely does one that has removed from his native spot form elsewhere relations that can stand him in stead when he wishes to glance into human life at once intimately and broadly.

Somewhat dissociated in appearance from those characteristics of Wordsworth which we have already mentioned, but demonstrably compatible with them, was his strong sense of the antique: his lively interest in the traditional, the legendary, and the historical. We see in Wordsworth, in this respect, a certain similarity to a man from whom otherwise he differed much—Sir Walter Scott. The English poet seems to have had the same liking for significant anecdotes and snatches of ancient song and ballad, the same reverence for

Digitized by Google

pedigree, and the same pleasure in associating places known to him with celebrated transactions of the past, as were observable, in still larger degree, in the Scottish novelist. Among the poems that exemplify this characteristic of our author are the dramatic poem of *The Borderers*, the beautiful poem entitled *Hart-leap Well*, the long legendary poem of *The White Doe of Rylstone* (which is in the metre, and somewhat in the style, of much of Scott's poetry), and also many of the shorter pieces written during tours in Scotland and in various parts of England. A particular illustration of this quality of Wordsworth's mind is also presented in his Scott-like habit of introducing, almost lovingly, topographical references and the names of places into his verse. Thus, in the poem *To Joanna*, describing the echo of a lady's laugh heard among the mountains :—

"The rock, like something starting from a sleep,
Took up the Lady's voice, and laughed again;
That ancient woman seated on Helm-crag
Was ready with her cavern; Hammar-scar
And the tall steep of Silverhow sent forth
A noise of laughter; Southern Loughrigg heard,
And Fairfield answered with a mountain tone;
Helvellyn far into the clear blue sky
Carried the Lady's voice; old Skiddaw blew
His speaking-trumpet; back out of the clouds
Of Glaramara southward came the voice;
And Kirkstone tossed it from his misty head."

Digitized by Google

But most conspicuously of all the poet has exhibited his interest in the antique and historical, and his power of imaginatively reproducing it, in his fine series of Ecclesiastical Sonnets, wherein he traces, as in a series of bold retrospective glimpses, the history of Christianity in the British Islands. There are passages in these Sonnets worth, for historical effect, many pages of the writings of our ecclesiastical historians.

Of the various other excellences of Wordsworth we will particularize but one more—the exquisite propriety and delicacy of his style, his easy and perfect mastery over the element of language. He must have possessed a natural gift of rich and exuberant expression; but it is equally evident that he must have, at a very early period, submitted this natural exuberance to a careful and classic training, and also that he must have bestowed his best pains in finishing, according to his own ideas of correctness, all his compositions individually. Hence greater smoothness and beauty, and more of strict logical coherence, in Wordsworth's style than is usual even among careful poets, as well as a more close fitting of the language to the measure of the thought, and a comparative freedom from forced rhymes and jarring evasions of natural forms of words. This appears even in the greater typographical neatness of a printed page of Wordsworth's poetry, as compared, for example, with a printed page of Byron's, the lax and

Digitized by Google

dash-disrupted look of which suggests to practised eyes the notion at once of more energetic genius and greater literary haste. Specimens of Wordsworth's extreme felicity of expression have already been given in the previous extracts; and in selecting for incessant repetition such poems of his as *We are Seven*, and such lines as those famous ones about the "yellow primrose," the public have already indicated their appreciation in his case of this merit in particular. A quotation or two, however, illustrative of the same thing, may here be added. Observe how variously and yet simply the language, in the following passages, pursues the intricacies and adapts itself to the mood of the meaning:—

"A village churchyard, lying as it does in the lap of Nature, may indeed be most favourably contrasted with that of a town of crowded population; and sepulture therein combines many of the best tendencies which belong to the mode practised by the ancients with others peculiar to itself. The sensations of pious cheerfulness which attend the celebration of the Sabbath-day in rural places are profitably chastised by the sight of the graves of kindred and friends, gathered together in that general home towards which the thoughtful yet happy spectators themselves are journeying. Hence, a parish church, in the stillness of the country, is a visible centre of a community of the living and the dead, a point to which are habitually referred the nearest concerns of both."—*Essay on Epitaphs.*

Digitized by Google

"To all that binds the soul in powerless trance,
Lip-dewing song, and ringlet-tossing dance."

Descriptive Sketches.

"She dwelt among the untrodden ways
Beside the springs of Dove,
A maid whom there were none to praise,
And very few to love:
A violet by a mossy stone
Half hidden from the eye!
Fair as a star when only one
Is shining in the sky!
She lived unknown, and few could know
When Lucy ceased to be;
But she is in her grave, and, oh,
The difference to me!"

Miscellaneous Poems.

"Then up I rose,
And dragged to earth both branch and bough, with crash
And merciless ravage; and the shady nook
Of hazels, and the green and mossy bower,
Deformed and sullied, patiently gave up
Their quiet being: and, unless I now
Confound my present feelings with the past,
Ere from the mutilated bower I turned
Exulting, rich beyond the wealth of kings,
I felt a sense of pain when I beheld
The silent trees, and saw the intruding sky."

Nutting.

"Great God! I'd rather be
A pagan suckled in a creed outworn;
So might I, standing on this pleasant lea,

Digitized by Google

Have glimpses that would make me less forlorn;
Have sight of Proteus rising from the sea;
Or hear old Triton blow his wreathèd horn."

Sonnets.

"Nuns fret not at their convent's narrow room;
And hermits are contented with their cells;
And students with their pensive citadels;
Maids at the wheel, the weaver at his loom,
Sit blithe and happy; bees that soar for bloom
High as the highest peak of Furness-fells
Will murmur by the hour in foxglove bells:
In truth, the prison unto which we doom
Ourselves no prison is: and hence to me,
In sundry moods, 'twas pastime to be bound
Within the Sonnet's scanty plot of ground;
Pleased if some souls (for such there needs must be)
Who have felt the weight of too much liberty
Should find brief solace there, as I have found."

Sonnets.

That we would assign to Wordsworth a high place among the poets of England the whole tenor of our observations hitherto will have made clear. At the same time, that he falls short of the very highest rank, that he does not stand on the very top of our English Parnassus, where Chaucer, Milton, and Spenser keep reverent company with Shakespeare, but rather on that upper slope of the mountain whence these greatest are visible, and where various other poets hold perhaps as just, if not so fixed, a footing: this also we have sought

Digitized by Google

to convey as part of our general impression. We do not think, for example, that Wordsworth was so great a poet as Burns; and, if it is only in respect of general mental vigour and capacity, and not in respect of poetic genius *per se*, that Dryden, Pope, and Coleridge, could be justly put in comparison with Wordsworth, and, being so put in comparison, preferred to him on the whole, yet there are others in our list of poets for whom, even after the ground of competition has been thus restricted, we believe it would be possible to take up the quarrel. With all the faults of Byron, both moral and literary, the poetic efflux in *him* came from greater constitutional depths, and brought, if less pure, at least more fervent, matter with it than the poetry of Wordsworth: had Keats and Shelley lived longer, even those that sneer at the Byronic might have seen poets comparable, in their estimation, to the Patriarch of the Lakes; and, should our noble Tennyson survive as a constant writer till his black locks have grown grey, one sees qualities in him that predict for him more than a Wordsworth's fame. Keeping in view, therefore, these comparisons and contrasts, it seems proper that we should add to the foregoing enumeration of some of Wordsworth's characteristic excellences a word or two descriptive of some accompanying defects.

First of all, then, as it seems to us, the intellect of Wordsworth, though very far beyond the ordinary in its

Digitized by Google

dimensions, and very assiduously developed by culture, was by no means of the largest known English calibre. Not to bring into the comparison such rare giants as Shakespeare, Bacon, and Milton, there have been, and probably still are, very many distinguished men in our island fit to rank intellectually as the peers of Wordsworth, or even as his superiors. Making the necessary discrimination between native intellectual strength to arrive at conclusions and the soundness of the conclusions arrived at, one would say that Johnson, Burke, Burns, David Hume, and not a few others that might be named, were presumably men of more powerful intellect than Wordsworth. Partly because of the time at which they lived, partly from causes for which they were personally more responsible, the intellectual conclusions of those men, or of some of them, may have been less noble and lofty than those of Wordsworth, their favourite forms of thought more coarse, their philosophy less true, deep, and ethereal. But their intellectual strength or grasp, their sense and insight, their whole available power to do, discern, and invent, were perhaps greater. Even of Pope, on whose reputation as a poet Wordsworth and his followers have been so severe, it might be maintained that, comparison of poetic merit apart, his was the denser and nimbler brain. Nor would the greatest admirers of Wordsworth say that in force and reach of intellect he

Digitized by Google

excelled his friend Coleridge. Fine, stately, and silvery as Wordsworth's prose writings are, they want the depth, originality, and richness of the similar compositions of that old man eloquent. Wordsworth's, in short, was not a vast or prodigious, but only a very high and serene intellect. Now, though it has been already shown that it is not intellect as such that makes a poet, but that either a man may have a great intellect and be no poet or may be a poet without having an extraordinary intellect, yet, as it has been shown also that to constitute a great poet great intellect is essential, we may assume it as a fact that the measure of the general intellectual power of any particular poet is also so far a measure of his poetic excellence. According to this rule, we should first apply the intellectual test, so as to decide Wordsworth's place (probably beside such men as Coleridge and Dryden) in our general hierarchy of English men of letters of all sorts taken together; then, dividing this miscellaneous body into kinds or classes, we should retain Wordsworth exactly at his ascertained height among the poets; and, lastly, allowing to the whole class of poets as much additional elevation as might be thought necessary, on the score of any supposed superiority of the poetical constitution as such, we should fix Wordsworth's just place among all the ornaments of English literature.

A second defect in Wordsworth is his want of

Digitized by Google

humour. This charge has been made so often against other celebrated writers that one is almost ashamed to bring it forward again in any new case whatever. Nevertheless, it is a charge of real weight against any one regarding whom it can be proved, and it is hardly necessary to offer proofs that it is true regarding Wordsworth. There are, indeed, poems of his, such as *The Waggoner*, *The Idiot Boy*, and *The Street Musician*, that display a kind of genial and warm interest in the little pleasant blunders and less than tragic mishaps of daily life; but in such instances we seem to recognise the air of the poet as that of a sedate dreamer looking at matters, or hearing of them, with a hard benevolent smile, rather than as that of a man of hearty native humour, recklessly enjoying what is jocose. There is no real mirth, no rich sense of the comic, in all that Wordsworth has written. In that full sly love of a jest that lurks in the down-looking eye of Chaucer, as well as in the broad and manly capacity of laughter that distinguished Burns, the poet of the Lakes was totally wanting. Hence it is that, among all his characters, he has given us none like the Host of the Tabard in the *Canterbury Pilgrimage*, and that, living as he did in a notable part of England, the whole spirit and peculiarity of which he sought to make his own, he could not imbibe or reproduce its humours. Whenever, in obedience to an intellectual perception of the existence

Digitized by Google

in society of such so-called "humours," he attempts to introduce them into his poetry, he either only reaches the playful, or betrays his natural seriousness by keeping the moral lesson strictly in view. Now, though there have been really great poets, Milton and Schiller for example, in whom this defect of humour was as marked as in Wordsworth, yet in such cases it will be found that the defect did, after all, operate to some extent injuriously, and had to be made good in some way by very ample compensations. If Milton had not humour, he had a large measure of what may properly enough be called wit, an infinite power of scorn, and a tremendous mastery of the language of abuse and sarcasm. As regards Byron, also, not to mention Pope, it is impossible to say how much not only of his popularity, but also of his real worth as a poet, may depend on the quantity of admirable wit which he brought into the service of the Muse. But in Wordsworth there is almost as little of wit, properly so called, as of humour. His moods are a benevolent seriousness, a rapt and spiritual state of the feelings, and a mild and sacerdotal sympathy with all that he sees. He may feel contempt, as indeed few men are said to have done in a greater degree, but he has no art in the ludicrous expression of it; he sometimes smiles, but he never laughs. In a poet of actual English life this is to be regarded as a considerable disqualification.

Digitized by Google

We may indicate another deficiency in Wordsworth by repeating the common criticism that he lacks energy, fire, impulse, intensity, passion. Wordsworth was, according to his own definition of a poet, "a man endowed with more lively sensibility, more enthusiasm and tenderness, than are supposed to be common among mankind;" but what we now mean is something quite consistent with this. There was no tremendousness, nothing of the Pythic, in the nature of Wordsworth.

"I surely not a man ungently made,"

are the fitting words he uses in describing himself. A calm, white-haired sage, who could thrill to the beauty of a starry night, and not a swart-faced Titan like Burns, full of strength and fire, was the poet of the *Excursion*. With all his pathos, all his clearness of vision, there were sorrows of humanity he never touched, recesses of dark moral experience he could not pierce nor irradiate. We feel in his poetry as if we were spoken to by some mild and persuasive preacher, rather than borne down by the experienced utterance of a large-hearted man. He does not move us to the depths of our being; he only affects us gently. One reason for this must be that, naturally and by birth, Wordsworth was deficient in some of the more formidable elements of the human constitution. Possessing in large degree the elements

Digitized by Google

of intellect, sensibility, and imagination, he seems to have been wanting in the Byronic element of personal passion. Moreover, and partly in consequence of this, he appears to have passed through the battle of life all but unwounded. This of itself would account for the placid, self-possessed, and often feeble style of his poetry. In the life of every man distinguished for what is called momentum of character there will almost certainly be found some sore biographical circumstance —some fact deeper and more momentous than all the rest—some strictly historical source of melancholy, that must be discovered and investigated if we would comprehend his ways. Man comes into this world regardless and unformed; and, although in his gradual progress through it he necessarily acquires, by the mere use of his senses and by communication with others, a multitudinous store of impressions and convictions, yet, if there is to be anything specific and original in his life, this, it would seem, can only be produced by the operation upon him of some one overbearing accident or event, which, rousing him to new wakefulness, and evoking all that is latent in his nature, shall bind these impressions and convictions in a mass together, breathe through them the sternness of personal concern, and impart to them its seal and pressure. The experiences that most commonly perform this function in the lives

Digitized by Google

of men are those of Friendship and Love. The power of Love to rouse men to larger and more fervid views of nature has been celebrated since the beginning of time. A man that has once undergone Love's sorrow in any extreme degree is by that fact awakened at once and for ever to the melancholy side of things; he becomes alive to the gloomy in nature and to the miserable in life; and, by one stupendous resumption of stars, clouds, trees, and flowers, into his own pained being, like an old coinage requiring re-issue, he realizes how it is that all creation groaneth and travaileth together in spirit until now. So also, though perhaps more rarely, with the influence of exalted and lost Friendship. But Wordsworth, happily for himself, seems to have met with no such accident of revolution. Passing through the world as a pilgrim, pure-minded, and even sad with the sense of the mysterious future, nothing occurred in his journey to strike him down as a dead man, and agonize him into a full knowledge of the whole mystery of the present. Hence, we believe, the want of that intensity in his poetry which we find in the writings, not only of the so-called subjective poets, such as Byron and Dante, but also of the greatest objective poets, as Goethe and Shakespeare. The ink of Wordsworth is rarely his own blood.

It is little more than an extension of the last remark

Digitized by Google

to say that Wordsworth was rather a poet or bard than (if we may be allowed the distinction) a lyrist or minstrel. The purpose of the poet, to use the term for the moment in this restricted sense, is to describe, narrate, or represent some portion of the external, as it is rounded out and made significant in his own mind; the purpose of the lyrist or minstrel is to pour forth the passing emotions of his soul and inflame other men with the fire that consumes himself. Accordingly, the faculties most special to the merely poetic exercise, as in the old Homeric epos or in modern descriptive verse, are those of intellect, sensibility, and imagination —passion or personal excitement being but a separate element, which may be more or less present according to circumstances, and which ought, as some think, to be absent from pure poetry altogether; whereas, in lyrical effusion, on the other hand, passion or present excitement is nearly all in all. The poetry of Keats may be taken as a specimen of pure poetry as such: all his chief poems are literally *compositions* or creations, the results of a process by which the poet's mind, having projected itself into an entirely imaginary element, devoid of all connexion with the present, worked and moved therein slowly and fantastically at its own will and pleasure. As specimens, again, of the purely lyrical, we have all such pieces, ancient and modern, as

Digitized by Google

are properly denominated psalms, odes, hymns, or songs. When, therefore, people talk, as they now incessantly do, of calmness as being essential to the poet, and when, with Wordsworth, they define the poetic art to consist in the tranquil recollection of bygone emotion, it is clear that they can have in view only pure poetry, the end of which is to represent in an imaginative manner some portion of the outward. For, of the lyrist or song-writer it may be affirmed, just as of his near kinsman the orator, that the more of passion or personal impetus he has the better; and, so far from advising him to wait for complete tranquillity, one would advise him to select, as the true lyrical moment, that first moment, whenever it is, when the primary perturbation has just so far subsided that his trembling hands can sweep the strings. But with this difference comes another. The poet, in describing his scene or narrating his story, feels himself impelled to every legitimate mode of increasing the pleasure he conveys; and the result, in one direction, is Metre. But, however natural Metre may have been in its origin, it has now become to the poet rather a pre-established arrangement or available set of conditions, to the rule of which he adapts what he has already in other respects rendered complete, than a compulsory suggestion of the poetic act itself. Not so with the lyrist. As cadence

Digitized by Google

or musical utterance is natural in an excited state of the feelings, so in lyrical poetry ought the song or melody to be more than the words. The heart of the lyrist should be a perpetual fountain of song; and, when he is to hold direct communication with the world, an inarticulate hum or murmur, rising, as it were, from the depths of his being, ought to precede and necessitate all the actual speech. Now, in this lyrical capability, this love of sound or cadence for its own sake, Wordsworth is certainly inferior to many other poets. One might have inferred as much from the narrowness of his theory of verse; but the fact is rendered still more apparent by a perusal of his poems themselves. Very few poets have been more admirable masters of poetic metre: no versification is more clear, various, and flexible, or more soothing to the ear, than that of Wordsworth. But he is not a singer or a minstrel properly so called; the lyric madness does not seize him; verse with him is rather an exquisite variety of rhetoric, a legitimate æsthetic device, than a necessary form of utterance. Seldom in Wordsworth is there a stanza after reading which and quite losing sight of the words we are still haunted (as we constantly are in Burns, Byron, and Tennyson) by an obstinate recollection of the tune. Were we required to say in what portion of Wordsworth's poetry he has

Digitized by Google

shown most of this true lyric spirit, in which we believe him to have been on the whole deficient, we should unhesitatingly mention his Sonnets. These are among the finest and most sonorous things in our language; and it is by them, in conjunction with his *Excursion* (or, as we may now say, *The Recluse*) that his great name will be most surely perpetuated.

Digitized by Google

II.

SCOTTISH INFLUENCE IN BRITISH LITERATURE.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

II.

SCOTTISH INFLUENCE IN BRITISH LITERATURE.[1]

It was in the winter of 1786-87 that the poet Burns, a new prospect having been suddenly opened up to him by the kind intervention of Blacklock and a few other influential men in Edinburgh, abandoned his desperate project of emigrating to the West Indies, and hastened to pay his memorable first visit to the Scottish metropolis. During that winter, as all who are acquainted with his life know, the Ayrshire ploughman, then in his twenty-ninth year, was the lion of Edinburgh society. Lord Monboddo, Dugald Stewart, Harry Erskine, Dr. Robertson, Dr. Hugh Blair, Henry Mackenzie, Dr. Gregory, Dr. Black, Dr. Adam Ferguson: such were the names then most conspicuous in the literary capital

[1] *North British Review*, August 1852.—"Life of Lord Jeffrey: with a Selection from his Correspondence." By Lord Cockburn, one of the Judges of the Court of Session in Scotland. 2 vols. 1852. [What is here printed is only the introductory part of the article as it stood in the *Review*.]

Digitized by Google

of North Britain; and it was in the company of these men, alternated with that of the Creeches, the Smellies, the Willie Nicols, and other contemporary Edinburgh celebrities of a lower grade, that Burns first realized the fact that he was no mere bard of local note, but a new power and magnate in Scottish Literature.

To those who are alive to the poetry of coincidences two anecdotes connected with this residence of Burns in Edinburgh will always be interesting.

What reader of Lockhart's *Life of Scott* has ever forgotten the account there given of Scott's first and only interview with Burns? As the story is now more minutely told in Mr. Robert Chambers's *Life of Burns*, Scott, who was then a lad of sixteen, just removed from the High School to a desk in his father's office, was invited by his friend and companion, the son of Dr. Ferguson, to accompany him to *his* father's house on an evening when Burns was to be there. The two youngsters entered the room, sat down unnoticed by their seniors, and looked on and listened in modest silence. Burns, when he came in, seemed a little out of his element. Instead of mingling at once with the company, he kept going about the room, looking at the pictures on the walls. One print particularly arrested his attention. It represented a soldier lying dead among the snow, his dog on one side, and a woman with a child in her arms on the other. Underneath

Digitized by Google

the print were some lines of verse descriptive of the subject, which Burns read aloud with a voice faltering with emotion. A little while after, turning to the company and pointing to the print, he asked if any one could tell him who was the author of the lines. No one chanced to know, except Scott, who remembered that they were from an obscure poem of Langhorne's. The information, whispered by Scott to some one near, was repeated to Burns; who, after asking a little more about the matter, rewarded his young informant with a look of kindly interest, and the words, (Sir Adam Ferguson reports them,) "You'll be a man yet, sir." Such is the story of the "literary ordination," as Mr. Chambers well calls it, of Scott by Burns. It is a scene which Sir William Allan should have been the man to paint.

The other story is now told for the first time by Lord Cockburn. Somewhere about the very day on which the foregoing incident happened, "a little black creature" of a boy, we are told, who was going up the High Street of Edinburgh, and staring diligently about him, was attracted by the appearance of a man whom he saw standing on the pavement. He was taking a leisurely view of the object of his curiosity, when some one standing at a shop-door tapped him on the shoulder, and said, "Ay, laddie, ye may weel look at that man! that's Robert Burns." The "little black creature," thus

Digitized by Google

early addicted to criticism, was Francis Jeffrey, the junior of Scott by two years, and exactly four years behind him in the classes of the High School, where he was known as a clever nervous little fellow, who never lost a place without crying. It is mentioned by Lord Cockburn that Jeffrey's first teacher at the High School, a Mr. Luke Fraser, had the good fortune to send forth, from three successive classes of four years each, three pupils no less distinguished than Walter Scott, Francis Jeffrey, and Henry Brougham.

It is not for the mere purpose of anecdote that we cite these names and coincidences. We should like very much to make out for Scotland in general as suggestive a series of her intellectual representatives as Lord Cockburn has here made out for part of the pedagogic era of the worthy and long dead Mr. Luke Fraser. Nor is it a difficult task.

Confining our regards to the eighteenth century, the preceding paragraphs enable us to group together at least three conspicuous Scottish names as belonging, by right of birth, to the third quarter of that century—Burns, born in Ayrshire in 1759; Scott, born in Edinburgh in 1771; and Jeffrey, born in the same place in 1773. Suppose, however, that we go a little farther back for some other prominent Scottish names of the same century. Then the readiest to occur to the

Digitized by Google

memory will be these:—James Thomson, the poet, born in Roxburghshire in 1700; Thomas Reid, the philosopher, born near Aberdeen in 1710; David Hume, born at Edinburgh in 1711; Robertson, the historian, born in Mid-Lothian in 1721; Tobias Smollett, the novelist, born at Cardross in the same year; Adam Smith, born at Kirkaldy, in 1723; Robert Fergusson, the Scottish poet, born at Edinburgh in 1750; and Dugald Stewart, born at Edinburgh in 1753. If, for a similar purpose, we come down to the last quarter of the century, five names at least will be sure to occur to us, in addition to that of Brougham—Thomas Campbell, born in Glasgow in 1777; Thomas Chalmers, born at Anstruther in Fifeshire in 1780; John Wilson, born at Paisley in 1785; Sir William Hamilton, born at Glasgow in 1788; Edward Irving, born at Annan in Dumfriesshire in 1792; and Thomas Carlyle, born near Ecclefechan, in the same county, in 1795. In this list we omit the distinguished contemporary Scottish names in physical science. We ought not, however, to omit the names of Sir James Mackintosh, born near Inverness in 1765, and James Mill, born at Montrose in 1773. The short life of Burns, if we choose him as the central figure of the group, connects all the persons named. The oldest of them was in the prime of life when Burns was born, and the youngest of them had seen the light before Burns died.

Digitized by Google

On glancing along this series of eminent Scotchmen born in the eighteenth century, it will be seen that they may be roughly distributed into two nearly equal classes—men of philosophic intellect, devoted to the work of general speculation, or thought as such; and men of literary or poetic genius, whose works belong more properly to the category of pure literary or artistic effort. In the one class may be ranked Reid, Hume, Adam Smith, Dugald Stewart, Mackintosh, Mill, Chalmers, and Sir William Hamilton; in the other, Thomson, Smollett, Robertson, Fergusson, Burns, Scott, Jeffrey, Campbell, Wilson, Irving, and Carlyle. Do not let us be mistaken. In using the phrases "philosophic intellect" and "literary genius" to denote the distinction referred to, we do not imply anything of accurate discrimination between the phrases themselves. For aught that we care, the phrases may be reversed, and the men of the one class may be styled men of philosophic genius, and those of the other men of literary habit and intellect. If we prefer to follow the popular usage in our application of the terms, it is not with any intention of making out for the one class, by the appropriation to it of the peculiar term "genius," a certificate of a higher kind of excellence than belongs to the other. Even according to the popular acceptation of the term, several of those whom we have included in the literary category—as, for example,

Digitized by Google

Robertson—must be denied the title of men of genius: while, by no endurable definition of the term, could the title of men of genius be refused to such men as Adam Smith, Chalmers, and Hamilton. Nor even when thus explained will our classification bear a very rigid scrutiny. By a considerable portion of what may be called the fundamental or unapparent half of his genius Carlyle belongs to the class of speculative thinkers; while, on the other hand, the case of Chalmers is one in which the thinking or speculative faculty, which certainly belonged to him, was surcharged and deluged by such a constant flood from the feelings that, instead of ranking him with the thinkers as above, we might, with equal or greater propriety, transpose him to the other side, or even name him on both sides. His thinking faculty, which was what he himself set most store by, was so beset and begirt by his other and more active dispositions that, instead of working on and on through any resisting medium with iron continuity, it discharged itself almost invariably, as soon as it touched a subject, in large proximate generalizations.

On the whole, then, instead of the foregoing classification of eminent Scotchmen into men of speculation and men of general literature, one might adopt as equally serviceable a less formal classification which the common satirical talk respecting Scotchmen will suggest. The hard, cool, logical Scotchman: such is

Digitized by Google

the stereotyped phrase in which Englishmen describe the natives of North Britain. There is a sufficient amount of true perception in the phrase to justify its use; but the appreciation it involves reaches only to the surface. The well-known phrase, *perfervidum ingenium Scotorum*, used, Buchanan tells us, centuries ago on the Continent to express the idea of the Scottish character then universally current, and founded on a large induction of instances, is, in reality, far nearer to the fact. Without maintaining at present that *all* Scotchmen are perfervid,—that Scotchmen in general are, as we have seen it ingeniously argued, not cool, calculating, and cautious, but positively rash, fanatical, and tempestuous,—it will be enough to refer to the instances which prove at least that *some* Scotchmen have this character. The thing may be expressed thus:—On referring to the actual list of Scotchmen who have attained eminence by their writings or speeches in this or the last century, two types may be distinguished, in one or the other of which the Scottish mind seems necessarily to cast itself—(1) an intellectual type specifically Scottish, but Scottish only in the sense that it is the type which cultured Scottish minds assume when they devote themselves to the work of specific investigation; and (2) a more popular type, characterizing those Scotchmen who, instead of pursuing the work of specific investigation, follow a

Digitized by Google

career calling forth all the resources of thought and sentiment. Scotchmen of the first, or more fixed and formal, type are Reid, Smith, Hume, Mill, Mackintosh, and Hamilton; in all of whom, notwithstanding their differences, we see that tendency towards metaphysical speculation for which the Scottish mind has become celebrated. Scotchmen of the other or popular type, partaking of the metaphysical tendency or not, but drawing their essential inspiration from the sentimental depths of the national character, are Burns, Scott, Chalmers, Irving, and Carlyle. However we may choose to express it, the fact of this twofold forthgoing of the Scottish mind, either in the scholastic and logical direction marked out by one series of eminent predecessors, or in the popular and literary direction marked out by another series of eminent predecessors, cannot be denied.

After all, however, there *is*, classify and distinguish as we may, a remarkable degree of homogeneousness among Scotchmen. The people of North Britain are more homogeneous, have decidedly a more visible basis of common character, than the people of South Britain. A Scotchman may indeed be almost anything that is possible in this world. He may be a saint or a debauchee, a Christian or a sceptic, a spendthrift or a usurer, a soldier or a statesman, a poet or a statistician, a fool or a man of genius, clear-headed or confused-

Digitized by Google

headed, a Thomas Chalmers or a Joseph Hume, a dry man of mere secular facts, or a man through whose mind there roll for ever the stars and all mysteries. Still, under every possible form of mental combination or activity, there will be found in every Scotchman something distinguishable as his birth-quality or *Scotticism.*

What is this *Scotticism* of Scotchmen? What is this ineradicable, universally-combinable element or peculiarity, breathed into the Scottish soul by those conditions of nature and of life which inhere in or hover over the area of the Scottish earth, and which are repeated in the same precise *ensemble* nowhere else? Comes it from the hills, or the moors, or the mists, or any of those other features of scenery and climate which distinguish bleak and rugged Scotland from green and fertile England? In part, doubtless, from these, as from all else that is Scottish. But there are hills, and moors, and mists where Scotchmen are not bred; and it is rather in the long series of the memorable things that have been done on the Scottish hills and moors—the acts which the retrospective eye sees flashing through the old Scottish mists—that one is to seek the origin and explanation of whatever Scotticism is. Now, as compared with England at least, that which has come down to the natives of Scotland as something peculiar, generated by the series of past trans-

Digitized by Google

actions of which their country has been the scene, is an intense spirit of nationality.

No nation in the world is more factitious than the Scotch, none more composite. If in England there have been Celts, Romans, Saxons, Danes, and Normans, in Scotland there have been Celts, Romans, Norwegians, Danes, Anglo-Saxons, and Anglo-Normans. The only difference of any consequence in this respect probably is that, whereas in England the Celtic element is derived chiefly from the British or Welsh, and the Gothic element chiefly from the Teutonic or Continental-German source, in Scotland the Gaels have furnished most of the Celtic, and the Scandinavian Germans most of the Gothic element. Nor, if we regard the agencies that have acted intellectually on the two nations, shall we find Scotland to have been less notably affected from without than England. To mention only one circumstance, the Reformation in Scotland was marked by a much more decided importation of new modes of thinking and new social forms than the Reformation in the sister country. But, though quite as factitious as the English nation, the Scottish, by reason of its very smallness, has always possessed a more intense consciousness of its nationality, and a greater liability to be acted upon throughout its whole substance by a common thought or a common feeling. Even as late as the year 1707 the entire population of Scotland did

Digitized by Google

not exceed one million of individuals; and if, going farther back, we fancy this small nation placed on the frontier of one so much larger, and obliged continually to defend itself against the attacks of so powerful a neighbour, we can have no difficulty in conceiving how, in the smaller nation, the feeling of a central life would be sooner developed and kept more continuously active. The sentiment of nationality is essentially negative. It is the sentiment of a people which has been taught to recognise its own individuality by incessantly marking the line of exclusion between itself and others. Almost all the great movements of Scotland, as a nation, have accordingly been of a negative character. They have been movements of self-defence. The War of National Independence against the Edwards, the Non-Episcopal struggle in the reigns of the Charleses, the Non-Intrusion controversy of later times, may be taken as examples. The very motto of Scotland is negative: *Nemo me impune lacesset.* It is different with England. There have of course been negative movements in England too, but these have been movements of one faction or part of the English people against another; and the activity of the English nation, as a whole, has consisted, not in preserving its own individuality from external attack, but in fully and genially evolving the various elements which it finds within itself, or in powerful positive exertions of its strength upon what lies outside of it.

Digitized by Google

The first and most natural form of what we have called the Scotticism of Scotchmen—that is, of the peculiarity which differences them from people of other countries, and more expressly from Englishmen—is this *amor patriæ*, this inordinate intensity of national feeling. There are very few Scotchmen who, whatever they may pretend, are devoid of this pride in being Scotchmen. Penetrate to the heart of any Scotchman, even the most Anglified or the most philosophic that can be found, and there will certainly be seen a remnant in it of loving regard for the little land that lies north of the Tweed. And what eminent Scotchman can be named in whose constitution a larger or smaller proportion of the *amor Scotiæ* has not been visible? In some of the foremost of such men, as in Burns, Scott, and Wilson, this *amor Scotiæ* has been present as even a professed ingredient of their genius, a sentiment determining, to a great extent, the style and matter of all that they have written or attempted:—

"The rough bur-thistle spreading wide
Amang the bearded bear,
I turned the weeder-clips aside,
And spared the symbol dear.
No nation, no station
My envy e'er could raise;
A Scot still, but blot still,
I knew nae higher praise."

Digitized by Google

In reading the writings of such men, one is perpetually reminded, in the most direct manner, that these writings are to be regarded as belonging to a strictly national literature. But even in those Scotchmen in the determination of whose intellectual efforts the *amor Scotiæ* has acted no such ostensible part the presence of some mental reference to, or intermittent communication of sentiment with, the land of their birth is almost sure to be detected. The speculations of Reid, Hume, and Adam Smith, and, in some degree, also, those of Chalmers, were on matters interesting not to Scotchmen alone, but to the human race as such; and yet, precisely as these men enunciated their generalities intended for the whole world in good broad Scotch, so had they all, after their different ways, a genuine Scottish relish for Scottish humours, jokes, and antiquities. The same thing is true of Carlyle, a power as he is recognised to be not in Scottish only, but in all European literature. Even James Mill, who, more than most Scotchmen, succeeded in conforming, both in speech and in writing, to English habits and requirements, relapsed into the Scot when he listened to a Scottish song or told a Scottish anecdote. But perhaps the most interesting example of the appearance of an intense *amor Scotiæ* where, from the nature of the case, it could have been least expected, is afforded by the writings of Sir William Hamilton. If there is a man

Digitized by Google

now alive conspicuous among his contemporaries for the exercise on the most magnificent scale of an intellect the most pure and abstract, that man is Sir William;[1] and yet, not even when discussing the philosophy of the unconditioned or perfecting the theory of syllogism, does he forget his Scottish lineage. With what glee, in his notes, or in stray passages in his dissertations themselves, does he seize every opportunity of adding to the proofs that speculation in general has been largely affected by the stream of specific Scottish thought—quoting, for example, the saying of Scaliger, "*Les Ecossois sont bons Philosophes;*" or dwelling on the fact that at one time almost every continental university had a Scottish professorship of philosophy, specially so named; or reviving the memories of defunct Balfours, and Duncans, and Chalmerses, and Dalgarnos, and other "*Scoti extra Scotiam agentes*" of other centuries; or startling his readers with such genealogical facts as that Immanuel Kant and Sir Isaac Newton had Scottish grandfathers, and that the celebrated French metaphysician Destutt Tracy was, in reality, but a transmogrified Scotchman of the name of Stott! We know few things more refreshing than such evidences of strong national feeling in such a man. It is the Scottish Stagirite not ashamed of the

[1] Sir William died in 1856, four years after this was written.

Digitized by Google

bonnet and plaid; it is the philosopher in whose veins flows the blood of a Covenanter.

Even now, when Scotchmen, their native country having been so long merged in the higher unity of Great Britain, labour altogether in the service of this higher unity, and forget or set aside the smaller, they are still liable to be affected characteristically in all that they do by the consciousness that they are Scotchmen. This will be found true whether we regard those Scotchmen who work side by side with Englishmen in the conduct of British public affairs or British commerce, or those Scotchmen who vie with Englishmen in the walks of British authorship and literature. In either case the Scotchman is distinguished from the Englishman by this, that he carries the consciousness of his nationality about with him. Were he, indeed, disposed to forget it, the banter on the subject to which he is perpetually exposed in the society of his English friends and acquaintances would serve to keep him in mind of it. It is the same now with the individual Scotchman cast among Englishmen as it was with the Scottish nation when it had to defend its frontier against the English armies. He is in the position of a smaller body placed in contact with a larger one, and rendered more conscious of his individuality by the constant necessity of asserting it. But this self-assertion of a Scotchman among Englishmen, this constant feeling "I am a

Digitized by Google

Scotchman," rests, like the feeling of nationality itself, on a prior assertion of what is in fact a negative. For a Scotchman to be always thinking "I am a Scotchman" is, in the circumstances now under view, tantamount to always thinking "I am *not* an Englishman." The Englishman, on the other hand, has no corresponding feeling. As a member of the larger body, whose corporate activity has always been positive rather than negative, the Englishman simply acts out harmoniously his English instincts and tendencies, the feeling of not being a Scotchman never (except in the case of a stray Englishman located in Scotland) either spontaneously remaining in his mind or being roused in it by banter. The Scotchman who works in the general field of British activity has his thoughts conditioned, to some extent at least, by the negative of not being an Englishman; the Englishman thinks under no such limitation.

This leads us to a more intimate definition of the peculiarity of Scottish as compared with English thought. The rudest and most natural form of what we have called the Scotticism of Scotchmen consists, we have hitherto been saying, in simple consciousness of nationality, simple *amor Scotiæ*, or, in more restricted circumstances, the simple feeling of not being an Englishman. There are some Scotchmen, however, in whom this first and most natural form of Scotticism is

Digitized by Google

not very well pronounced, and who are either emancipated from it, or think that they are. We know not a few Scots who have really succeeded in transferring their enthusiastic regards from Scotland to the higher unity of Great Britain—men who, sometimes speaking in their own Scottish accent, sometimes in an accent almost purely English, find the objects of their solicitude and admiration, not in the land lying north of the Tweed, but rather in England, with her rich green parks and fields, her broad ecclesiastical hierarchy, her noble halls of learning, her majestic and varied literature, the full and generous character of her manly people. We know Scotchmen whose sentiment is more deeply stirred by Shakespeare's famous apostrophe to "this England" than by Scott's to the land of brown heath and shaggy wood. And, as Scotland and England are now united, such men are becoming more numerous. But even they shall not escape. If their native quality of Scotticism does not survive in them in the more palpable and open form of mere national feeling, mere *amor Scotiæ*, it survives, nevertheless, in an intellectual habit, having the same root, and as indestructible. And what is this habit? The popular charges of dogmatism, opinionativeness, pugnacity, and the like, brought against Scotchmen by Englishmen, are so many approximations to a definition of it. For our part, we should say that the special habit or

Digitized by Google

peculiarity which distinguishes the intellectual manifestations of Scotchmen—that, in short, in which the Scotticism of Scotchmen most intimately consists—is the habit of *emphasis*. All Scotchmen are *emphatic*. If a Scotchman is a fool, he gives such emphasis to the nonsense he utters as to be considerably more insufferable than a fool of any other country; if a Scotchman is a man of genius, he gives such emphasis to the good things he has to communicate that they have a supremely good chance of being at once or very soon attended to. This habit of emphasis is exactly that *perfervidum ingenium Scotorum* which used to be remarked some centuries ago wherever Scotchmen were known. But emphasis is perhaps a better word than fervour. Many Scotchmen are fervid too, but not all; but all, absolutely all, are emphatic. No one will call Joseph Hume a fervid man, but he is certainly emphatic. And so with David Hume, or Reid, or Adam Smith, or any of those colder-natured Scotchmen of whom we have spoken. Fervour cannot be predicated of them, but they had plenty of emphasis. In men like Burns, or Chalmers, or Irving, on the other hand, there was both emphasis and fervour; so also with Carlyle; and so, in a still more curious combination, with Sir William Hamilton. And, as we distinguish emphasis from fervour, so would we distinguish it from perseverance. Scotchmen are said to be persevering, but

Digitized by Google

the saying is not universally true. Scotchmen are or are not morally persevering, but all Scotchmen are intellectually emphatic. Emphasis, we repeat, intellectual emphasis, the habit of laying stress on certain things rather than co-ordinating all: in this consists what is essential in the Scotticism of Scotchmen. And, as this observation is empirically verified by the very manner in which Scotchmen enunciate their words in ordinary talk, so it might be deduced scientifically from what has been said regarding the nature and effects of the feeling of nationality. The habit of thinking emphatically is a necessary result of thinking much in the presence of, and in resistance to, a negative; it is the habit of a people that has been accustomed to act on the defensive, rather than of a people peacefully self-evolved and accustomed to act positively; it is the habit of Protestantism rather than of Catholicism, of Presbyterianism rather than of Episcopacy, of Dissent rather than of Conformity.

The greatest effects which the Scottish mind has yet produced on the world (and these effects, by the confession of Englishmen themselves, have not been small) have been the results, in part at least, of this national habit of emphasis. Until towards the close of last century, the special department of labour in which Scotchmen had, to any great extent, exerted themselves so as to make a figure in the general intellectual world,

Digitized by Google

was the department of Philosophy, metaphysical and dialectic. Their triumphs in this department are historical. What is called the Scottish Philosophy constitutes, in the eyes of all who know anything of history, a most important stage in the intellectual evolution of modern Europe. From the time of those old Duncans, Balfours, and Dalgarnos, mentioned by Sir William Hamilton, who discoursed on philosophy, and wrote dialectical treatises in Latin in all the cities of the Continent, down to our own days, one can point to a succession of Scottish thinkers in whom the interest in metaphysical studies was kept alive, and by whose labours new contributions to mental science were continually made. It was by the Scottish mind, in fact, that the modern philosophy was conducted to that point where Kant and the Germans took it up. The qualifications of the Scottish mind for this task were, doubtless, various. Perhaps there was something in that special combination of the Celtic and the Scandinavian out of which the Scottish nation, for the most part, took its rise, to produce an aptitude for dialectical exercises. Farther, it would not be altogether fanciful to suppose that those very national struggles of the Scotch in the course of which they acquired so strong a sense of their national individuality—that is, of the distinction between all that was Scotch and all that was not Scotch—served, in a rough way, to facilitate

Digitized by Google

for all Scotchmen that fundamental idea of the distinction between the *Ego* and the *Non-Ego* the clear and rigorous apprehension of which is the first step in philosophy and the one test of the philosopher. In a still more important respect, however, one might trace the success of the Scottish mind in philosophy to the national habit of intellectual emphasis. A Scotchman, when he thinks, cannot so easily and comfortably as the Englishman repose on an upper level of propositions co-ordinated for him by tradition, sweet feeling, and pleasant circumstance. That necessity of his nature which leads him to emphasise certain things, rather than to take all things together in their established co-ordination, drives him down and still down in search of certain generalities whereon he may see that all can be built. It was this habit of emphasis, this inability to rest on the level of sweetly-composed experience, that led Hume to scepticism; it was the same habit, the same inability, conjoined with more of faith and reverence, that led Reid to lay down in the chasm of Hume's scepticism certain blocks of ultimate propositions or principles, capable of being individually enumerated, and yet, as he thought, forming a sufficient basement for all that men think or believe. And the same tendency is visible among Scotchmen now. It amazes Scotchmen at the present day to see on what proximate propositions even Englishmen who are cele-

Digitized by Google

brated as thinkers can rest their speculations. The truth is that, if Scotchmen have, so far, a source of superiority over Englishmen in their habit of dwelling only on the emphatic, they have also in this same habit a source of inferiority. Quietism, mysticism, that soft, meditative disposition which takes things for granted in the co-ordination established by mere life and usage, pouring into the confusion thus externally given the oil of an abounding inner joy, interpenetrating all and harmonizing all—these are, for the most part, alien to the Scotchman. His walk is not by the meadows, the wheat fields, the green lanes, and the ivy-clad parish churches, where all is gentle, and antique, and fertile, but by the bleak sea-shore which parts the certain from the limitless, where there is doubt in the seamew's shriek, and where it is well if in the advancing tide he can find footing on a rock among the tangle. But this very tendency of his towards what is intellectually extreme injures his sense of proportion in what is concrete and actual; and hence it is that, when he leaves the field of abstract thought, and betakes himself to creative literature, he so seldom produces anything comparable, in fulness, wealth, and harmoniousness, to the imaginations of a Chaucer or a Shakespeare. The highest genius, indeed, involves also the capability of the intellectually extreme, and, accordingly, in the writings of those great Englishmen, just as

Digitized by Google

in those of the living English poet Tennyson, there are strokes in abundance of that pure intellectual emphasis in which the Scotchman delights; but then there is also with them such a genial acceptance of all things, great or small, in their established co-ordination that the flashes of emphasis are as if they came not from a battle done on an open moor, but from a battle transacting itself in the depths of a forest. Among Scottish thinkers, Mackintosh is the one that approaches nearest to the English model; and this may be accounted for by the fact that much of what he did consisted, from the necessities of the object-matter of his speculations, in judicious compromise.

But even in the field of literature we need not abandon the Scotchman. His habit of emphasis has here enabled him to do good service too. His entry on this field, however, was later than his entry on the field of philosophy. True, there had been, contemporary with the Scottish philosophers, or even anterior to them, Scottish poets and general prose-writers of note—Dunbar, Gawain Douglas, King James I., of Scotland, Buchanan, Sir David Lindsay, Henryson, Drummond, Allan Ramsay, and the like. True, also, in those snatches of popular ballad and song which came down from generation to generation in Scotland—many of them written by no one knows whom, and almost all of them overflowing with either humour or melancholy

Digitized by Google

—there was at once a fountain and a promise of an exquisite national literature. One can think of old Nicol Burn, the "violer," out on his rounds in the Yarrow district, and singing as he played:—

"But Minstrel Burn cannot assuage
His woes while time endureth,
To see the changes of this age
Which fleeting time procureth.
Full many a place stands in hard case
Where joy was wont beforrow,
With Humes that dwelt on Leader braes,
And Scotts that dwelt on Yarrow."

There was literature in the times when such old strains were sung. But the true avatar of the Scottish mind in modern literature came later than the manifestation of the same mind in philosophy. Were we to fix a precise date for it, we should name the period of Burns's first visit to Edinburgh and familiar meetings with the men of literary talent and distinction then assembled there.

Edinburgh was, indeed, even then a literary capital, boasting of its Monboddos, Stewarts, Robertsons, Blairs, Mackenzies, and Gregorys, men who had already begun the race of literary rivalry with their contemporaries south of the Tweed. But, so far as the literary excellence of these men did not depend on their participation in that tendency to abstract thinking

Digitized by Google

which had already produced its special fruit in the Scottish Philosophy, it consisted in little more than a reflection or imitation of what was already common and acknowledged in the prior or contemporary literature of South Britain. To write essays such as those of the *Spectator;* to be master of a style which Englishmen should pronounce pure, and to produce compositions in that style worthy of being ranked with the compositions of English authors: such was the aim and aspiration of Edinburgh *literati* between whom and their London cousins there was all the difference that there is between the latitude of Edinburgh and the latitude of London, between the daily use of the broad Scotch dialect and the daily use of the classic English. For Scotland this mere imitation of English models was a poor and unsatisfactory vein of literary enterprise. What was necessary was the appearance of some man of genius who should flash through all that, and who, by the application to literature, or the art of universal expression, of that same Scottish habit of emphasis which had already produced such striking and original results in philosophy, should teach the Scottish nation its true power in literature, and show a first example of it. Such a man was Burns. He it was who, uniting emotional fervour with intellectual emphasis, and drawing his inspiration from all those depths of sentiment in the Scottish people which his predecessors, the

Digitized by Google

philosophers, had hardly so much as touched, struck for the first time a new chord, and revealed for the first time what a Scottish writer could do by trusting to the whole wealth of Scottish resources. From the time of Burns, accordingly, there has been a series of eminent literary Scotchmen quite different from that series of hard logical Scotchmen who had till then been the most conspicuous representatives of their country in the eyes of the reading public of Great Britain—a series of Scotchmen displaying the power of emphatic sentiment and emphatic expression as strikingly as their predecessors had displayed the power of emphatic reasoning. While the old philosophic energy of Scotland still remained unexhausted—the honours of Reid, Hume, Smith, and Stewart passing on to such men as Brown, Mill, Mackintosh, and Hamilton (in favour of the last of whom even Germany has paused in her philosophic interregnum)—the special literary energy which had been awakened in the country descended along another line in the persons of Scott, Jeffrey, Chalmers, Campbell, Wilson, and Carlyle. Considering the amount of influence exerted by such men upon the whole spirit and substance of British literature, considering how large a share of the whole literary produce of Great Britain in the nineteenth century has come either from them or from other Scotchmen, and considering what a stamp of peculiarity marks

Digitized by Google

all that portion of this produce which *is* of Scottish origin, are we not entitled to say that the rise and growth of recent Scottish literature is as notable a historical phenomenon as the rise and growth of the Scottish philosophy? Considering, moreover, how lately Scotland has entered on this literary field, how little time she has had to display her powers, how recently she was in this respect savage, and how much of her savage vitality yet remains to be articulated in civilized books, may we not hope that her literary avatar is but beginning and has a goodly course yet to run? From Solway to Caithness we hear a loud *Amen.*

Digitized by Google

III.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF SHELLEY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

III.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF SHELLEY.[1]

CELEBRATED for many a transaction belonging to the history of Italy, the fifty miles of Italian coast which lie between Leghorn in Tuscany and Spezzia in the Sardinian states possess also, in virtue of certain events of which they were the scene in the summer of 1822, a peculiar interest in connexion with British poetry.

Byron and Shelley were then both living there. Voluntary exiles, for similar reasons, from their native land, and already personally known to each other, they had been residing separately for several years in different parts of Italy; during the few immediately preceding months they had been living in the same town of Pisa, seeing each other daily, and becoming better acquainted with each other; and now again they had

[1] *Macmillan's Magazine*, September 1860.

Digitized by Google

just parted—Byron to take up his summer-quarters at Leghorn, and Shelley his at a lonely spot near Lerici, in the Gulf of Spezzia. The two poets were thus, for the time, separated by the whole distance of the fifty intervening miles. A circumstance which made their separation rather unfortunate at the moment was that a third English poet—Mr. Leigh Hunt—was then on his way to Italy to join them. While Byron and Shelley were still together at Pisa, it had been arranged that Mr. Hunt should come out to them, and that the three should start a political and literary periodical which Byron had projected, and which, published at Pisa, should electrify Europe. Now that Byron and Shelley had separated, the arrangement had to be modified. Mr. Hunt was to join Lord Byron at Leghorn; they were to be the active partners in the periodical; and Shelley was but to visit them now and then, and help them as much as he could from his retreat at Lerici. Nor did the fifty miles of distance matter very much. Both Byron and Shelley were passionately fond of the sea; and yachting in that lovely bit of the Mediterranean was one of the pleasures that made them prefer Italy to England. Byron had just bought a beautiful craft, built like a man-of-war brig, to lie in Leghorn harbour, and be ready at a moment's notice to carry him and his friends Roberts and Trelawny wherever they chose;

Digitized by Google

and Shelley, according to his more modest tastes and means, had procured a small open pleasure-boat, to lie on the beach under the hill which rose behind his solitary house, and to carry himself, Mrs. Shelley, and any friend that might chance to visit them, along the Bay of Spezzia, or even southward, at a stretch, as far as Leghorn. With such means of communication, there was little fear but that Byron, Hunt, and Shelley would be often together! Byron's dangerous-looking craft, the *Bolivar*, showing her brazen teeth through her miniature port-holes, would often be cruising northwards in the direction of Spezzia, and Shelley's white-sailed boat would be seen coyly tacking to meet her; and, in the course of a month or two, the Italian preventive-men along the shore would know both well as the vessels of the English poet-lord and his mysterious fellow-countryman! Alas! and, to this day [1860], if we consider only what was historically possible, those two vessels or their successors might still have been cruising familiarly, each with its owner aboard, on the same tract of sea! Leigh Hunt, the oldest of the three poets, was alive among us but a few months ago, at the age of seventy-five; had Byron lived, he would now have been seventy-two; Shelley, had he lived, would have been sixty-eight. In the summer of which we speak Leigh Hunt was in his thirty-ninth year, Byron in his thirty-fifth, Shelley in his thirtieth.

Digitized by Google

Looking at Shelley, as we can fancy him standing on the beach at Lerici, what do we see? A man still young, rather tall, but bent a little at the shoulders from weakness—with a very small head, and hair naturally dark-brown and curling, but now prematurely tinged with grey; the face also singularly small, with a pale or pinkish-pale complexion, large spiritual-looking eyes, very delicate features, and an expression altogether graceful, etherial, and feminine. Could we hear him speak, the impression would be completed by his voice. This is described as having been very high and shrill, so that some one who heard it unexpectedly in a mixed company compared it to the scream of a peacock. On the whole, seen or heard even for the first time, he was a man to excite a feeling of interest, and a curiosity as to his previous history.

Born the heir to an English baronetcy, and to more than the usual wealth and consideration attending that rank, the whole life of Shelley had been a war against custom. At Eton the sensitive boy, almost girlish in his look and demeanour, had nerved himself, with meek obstinacy, though with secret tears, against every part of the established system—not only against the tyranny of his fellows, but also against the teaching of the masters. It had been the same when he went to Oxford. He was then a Greek scholar, a writer of verses, an insatiable student of the metaphysics of

Digitized by Google

Berkeley and Hume, an incessant reasoner with any one that would reason with him on points of philosophy or politics, and in every such argument an avowed Revolutionist, and at least a hypothetical Atheist. In the rooms of his college, or along the streets, his shrill voice might be heard attacking Christianity, Religion, the very idea of a God. He was frantically earnest on this subject, as if, by compelling discussion of it, he were digging at the root of all evil. At length, tired of merely talking with his acquaintances, he sent a printed statement of his opinions to the University authorities, challenging them to an argument with him as to the necessity or utility of any religious belief. The act was ghastly, and the reply of the authorities was his instant expulsion from the University. His family were shocked, and could not tell what to make of such a youth; and, at the age of seventeen, he removed to London to live as his own master. There he printed and privately distributed a number of copies of his *Queen Mab*, expanding and illustrating the poetical Atheism of the text in appended prose notes. He introduced himself by letter to men and women of genius, trying to enlist them in the great war which he had begun, and into which he thought the whole intellectual world must follow, against Statecraft and Priestcraft. He read with avidity Godwin's "Political Justice" —in the doctrines of which book he found a new social

Digitized by Google

gospel; and he resolved from that hour to square all his actions by what he considered strict justice, without reference to the opinions of others. At this time he had, by arrangement with his family, about 200*l.* a year; which income he was able to increase, by borrowing on his expectations, or in other ways. His own manner of living was extremely temperate; indeed, for several years he was a vegetarian in diet and drank only water. He had thus money to spend on objects that moved his charity. He was continually in quest of such objects. Every social anomaly, almost every social inequality, affected him intensely. If he saw a shivering beggar in the street asking alms beside a carriage, his longing was nothing less than to add the beggar and the carriage together on the spot and divide the sum by two. The sole use of his own money seemed to him to be to mitigate, as far as he could, these social inequalities. He did the most extraordinary and the most generous things. To give away twenty or thirty pounds, where he fancied it would relieve distress, was nothing to him. He involved himself in debt and serious inconvenience by repetitions of such acts of benevolence. Nor was it only with money that he was generous. His society, his sympathy, beyond the range of the intellectual occupations in which he delighted, were given, by preference, to the outcast and the wretched. It was in the same spirit of contempt for usage that, when, in his

Digitized by Google

twentieth year, his affections were engaged, he married the object of them—the daughter of a retired tradesman. After three years of married life, spent in different places, and latterly not happily, he and his wife had separated by mutual consent, she returning with her two children to her father's house. Shelley then formed the new connexion which ended in his second marriage, and went abroad to travel. On his return he resided for eighteen months in London—his fortune increased about this time, by his grandfather's death, to 1,000*l.* a year; which continued to be his income as long as he lived. This was the time too of his becoming acquainted with Leigh Hunt, and, through him, with Keats. One of his first acts on becoming acquainted with Leigh Hunt was to offer him 100*l.*; and Mr. Hunt himself has recorded that this was but the beginning of a series of kindnesses almost unprecedented in the annals of friendship. On one occasion of exigency he gave Hunt 1,400*l.* It was while Shelley was residing in London in 1815 that *Alastor, or The Spirit of Solitude* was composed. Early in 1816 he and his companion again went abroad. They resided for about a year and a half in Switzerland and in Italy. It was in Switzerland that they had first become acquainted with Lord Byron, who was then living there. On their return to England they went to Bath; and here it was that Shelley received the

Digitized by Google

terrible news of the suicide of his wife. To the horror of the event itself was added the public scandal which followed when the relatives of the unhappy woman instituted a suit in Chancery to prevent Shelley from taking back his children. They grounded their suit on the fact that Shelley was an avowed Atheist. On this, as in itself a sufficiently legal plea, Lord Chancellor Eldon gave judgment in their favour. As far as the newspapers could carry the report of the trial, the name and the antecedents of "the Atheist Shelley" had thus been blazoned over Britain. When the judgment was given, Shelley was residing with his second wife—Mary Wollstonecraft Godwin—at Great Marlow in Buckinghamshire. Here he had organised a regular system of charity. He had pensioners among the agricultural labourers and the poor silk-weavers all round; he even studied medicine, and walked the hospitals in London, that he might be of use to the sick. But neither in Great Marlow, nor anywhere else in England, could the philanthropy of a man who bore the brand of Atheist be trusted or tolerated. His very pensioners shrank from him, and took his money suspiciously. Strongly sensitive to such distrust, and fearing also future interferences of the law of England with his liberty, he had resolved, if even at the sacrifice of all his rights of inheritance to the family property, to leave England for ever. In the spring of 1818 he

Digitized by Google

had carried out the resolution by going to Italy. Before leaving England, he had written his *Revolt of Islam*, and many other pieces of verse and prose which now appear in his collected works; but the four years that had elapsed since his arrival in Italy had been the period of what are now esteemed his finest productions. During those four years—residing at Venice, at Rome, at Naples, at Florence, and finally, as we have seen, at Pisa—he had written his *Prometheus Unbound*, his *Cenci*, his *Hellas*, his *Julian and Maddalo*, his *Epipsychidion*, his *Witch of Atlas*, his *Ode to Naples*, and his *Adonais*, besides his translations in prose and verse from Plato, Calderon, the Homeric poets, and Goethe. During the same period, also, he had begun to take a more direct interest than before in the current politics of Britain and of Europe—working down his general doctrines respecting Man and Society into strong Radical lyrics, and satires on the Liverpool and Castlereagh administration, calculated to do rough service at home; and throwing much of his energy simultaneously into what we now call the cause of the oppressed nationalities. He had, indeed, a passion for being practical, and had recently spent a great deal of money on an attempt, which did not succeed, to establish a steamboat between Leghorn and Marseilles.

Such, from his birth, had been the twenty-nine years

Digitized by Google

of wandering, of wild clamour and agony, of fitful ecstasy of mind and heart, that had brought the poet, a kind of intellectual outcast, to his Salvator-Rosa solitude under the pine-hills of Spezzia, sloping to the sea. Part of all this past life of error and suffering (for time is merciful) had, doubtless, been left behind, melted and softened in the thin air of recollection; but part remained incorporate in the very being of the sufferer, not to be dissolved away even by the Italian sun, or soothed by the softness of the bluest heaven.

What proportion of the past had faded, and what remained, it might be difficult to say. Among the things that had faded, one might say with some certainty, was the early crudity of his exulting Atheism.

Even at first, had not Shelley himself assumed the name of Atheist, and employed it as a signature, and shrieked it wherever he went, and seemed sometimes to riot in the very horror it produced, it may be doubted whether, from any study of his poems, the name would ever have been attached to him. He would have been named, much more probably, a Pantheist, a Platonist, or the like. A recognition of the supernatural, of at least a spirit of intellectual beauty as pervading all visible things, of human life as but an evanescent incarnation and short local battle of principles that have their origin behind time and beyond the stars, seems the one

Digitized by Google

characteristic of Shelley's poetry from the first, which if we do not attend to, it has no logical coherence. In all our literature it would be difficult to find a soul that was less the soul of a Secularist. Only remember, in contrast with him, Bunyan's typical Atheist in the "Pilgrim's Progress." Christian and Hopeful are there toiling along on their road across a great plain, when they perceive afar off one coming softly and all alone meeting them, with his back towards that part of the horizon behind which was the Zion to which they were bound. This is "Atheist," who, when he comes up to them, announces to them, with a leering positiveness, that it is all a mistake—that there is no God and no Zion, and that they may as well go back with him, and snap their thumbs at being rid once for all of that troublesome delusion. Not so, certainly, at any time with Shelley! If he denies Zion and Christianity, and assails Christian and Hopeful for believing in them, it is as one walking, with mad eagerness, while he does so, in the same direction with them, scanning as intently the distant sky, and blaspheming sideways in their ears what he does not see, not because his eyes have ceased one moment to look for it, but out of a wild sorrow that it is not to be seen. A gleam, and one fancies he would falter in the middle of his talk, he would start and shade his eyes to gaze, he would fall to the ground weeping! Now, although there is no evidence that the

Digitized by Google

gleam ever came, though he still in his later years, as in his earlier, kept talking sideways at Christian and Hopeful in language which made them shudder, yet not only did he not cease to hurry on with them, but the very language of his sarcasm underwent a modification. Mr. Browning has stated it as his belief that, had Shelley lived, he would have ranged himself finally with the Christians. I do not feel that we are entitled to say so much as this; for his latest letters show, I think, that much of what had been accounted, in this respect, the darkest peculiarity of his life, still remained with him.

Of what else remained that which was perhaps most obvious to those about him was the shattered state of his nerves. Always of weak health, nothing but his temperate habits could have kept him alive so long; and now he was often racked by a pulmonary pain, which seemed to augur that, in any case, he had not many years to live. But, beyond this, the morbid nervous excitement induced by such a life as his had been had begun to manifest itself in that abnormal action of the senses which makes men subject to visions, apparitions, and the terrors of waking dream. Various instances of such hallucinations, or nervous paroxysms, are recorded by his biographers. Thus, while he was staying at Great Marlow, he alarmed his friends and the neighbourhood by a story of a

Digitized by Google

fight he had had with a burglar who had tried to murder him in the night; for which story, it is believed by some, there was no foundation in fact. So also, as some believe, with the story which he told of an Englishman coming up to him at the Post-office at Pisa, when he was inquiring for his letters, and knocking him down, with an oath, as "that Atheist Shelley." But the most extraordinary instance is that recorded in the diary of Captain Williams as having happened at Lerici itself during the very days of his last residence there. "Monday, May 6th," writes Captain Williams, "after tea, walking with Shelley on the terrace, and "observing the effect of moonshine on the waters, he "complained of being unusually nervous; and, stopping "short, he grasped me violently by the arm, and stared "stedfastly on the white surf that broke upon the "beach under our feet. Observing him sensibly affected, "I demanded of him if he were in pain. But he only "answered by saying 'There it is again—there!' He "recovered after some time, and declared that he saw, 'as plainly as he then saw me, a naked child rise from "the sea and clap its hands as in joy, smiling at him." This was on the 6th of May, 1822. Two months afterwards the omen was fulfilled.

Towards the end of June the news came that Leigh Hunt had arrived in Genoa, and was on his way to Leghorn. Shelley and Williams, who had been busy

Digitized by Google

with their new boat, resolved to set out in her to welcome Hunt. The weather had been overpoweringly hot, and the sea swollen and louring; but on the 1st of July a fine breeze sprang up, and they weighed for Leghorn. They performed the voyage in seven hours and a half, and anchored that night in Leghorn harbour beside the *Bolivar*, on board of which they slept. Next day, and for five days more, there were greetings of Hunt and his family, journeys with them and Byron to Pisa and other places, and much talk about the prospects of the new periodical. Unluckily, on account of some fray in Byron's house, which had brought an Italian servant of his within the grip of the Tuscan police, his Lordship had taken a sudden determination to leave Tuscany; and Shelley's chief care was to get such arrangements made as would prevent Hunt from being inconvenienced by this change of plan. He did all he could to secure this; and on the 8th of July, taking leave of Hunt, Byron, and others, he and Williams set out on their return to Lerici. An English sailor lad, named Charles Vivian, accompanied them in the boat. There were some fears for the weather, which for some days had been calm and sultry, but was now changed; but Shelley could not be persuaded to remain. The boat had not gone many miles, when one of the terrible squalls that occur in that part of the Mediterranean came on, and the friends

Digitized by Google

left at Leghorn became anxious. Captain Roberts, who had been watching the boat on her homeward track with a glass from Leghorn lighthouse, saw her last, when the storm came on, off Via Reggio, at some distance from the shore, hugging the wind with a press of canvas. The storm then spread rapidly like a dark mist, and blotted out that part of the horizon, enveloping the distant little boat and several larger vessels that were also out. When the storm passed onwards from that quarter, Captain Roberts looked again, and saw every vessel except the little one, which had vanished. Within that storm had been the apparition of the naked babe!——For days and days there was great anxiety among the friends on shore. At length the sea itself told all that ever was to be known of the mystery, by washing ashore the three bodies—that of Shelley, that of Williams, and that of the boy Vivian —on different parts of the coast. The body of Shelley was burnt on a pyre of wood, heaped with wine, salt, frankincense, and perfumes, near the spot where it had been cast ashore, Byron, Hunt, Trelawny and others assisting at the ceremony. The collected ashes were conveyed to Rome and there buried.

Whatever rank one may be disposed to assign, all in all, to Shelley among English Poets, no reader can deny that his genius was of the poetical order, that he pos-

Digitized by Google

sessed in a singular degree the faculty of ideality, of pure imagination. His larger poems are well and even carefully conceived as wholes, according to the peculiar kind of constructive art of which they are specimens. The language is logically precise, easy, graceful, and luxuriant; the versification is natural, various, and musical; and there are individual passages of acute and even comprehensive philosophical meaning, of powerful and delicate description, of weirdly and exquisite phantasy, and of tender and concentrated feeling. In his descriptions and visual fancies one notices, among other things, a wonderfully fine sense of colour. Thus Asia, in the *Prometheus Unbound*, expecting, in a vale of the Indian Caucasus, the arrival of her sister Oceanid, Panthea:—

"This is the season, this the day, the hour;
At sunrise thou shouldst come, sweet sister mine.
Too long denied, too long delaying, come!
The point of one white star is quivering still,
Deep in the orange light of widening morn
Beyond the purple mountains. Through a chasm
Of wind-divided mist the darker lake
Reflects it: now it wanes: it gleams again
As the waves fade, and as the burning threads
Of woven cloud unravel in the thin air:
'Tis lost; and through yon peaks of cloud-like snow
The roseate sunlight quivers: hear I not
The Æolian music of her sea-green plumes
Winnowing the crimson dawn?"

Digitized by Google

Perhaps one of the finest continuous passages in all the larger poems is the concluding portion of the same drama, where, partly in choruses of unseen spirits, and partly in dialogue between Prometheus and the Oceanids in a forest near his cave, the glorious state of the emancipated world of the Promethean era, when Jove is dethroned, and Love and Justice reign, is set forth in mystic allegory. The following speech of Panthea may serve as a specimen of the part that is in dialogue. The new or Promethean earth is figured by the vision of a vast solid sphere, as of crystal, filled with multitudinous shapes and colours, yet all miraculously inter-transpicuous, which is seen rushing, as in a whirlwind of harmony, through an opening of the forest, grinding, as it wheels, a brook that flows beneath into an azure mist of light, and whirling grass, trees, and flowers into a kneaded mass of aerial emerald. Within this strange orb the Spirit of the Earth is seen asleep, like a wearied child, pillowed on its alabaster arms, which are laid over its folded wings. Its lips are seen moving as in a smiling dream; and from a star upon its forehead there shoot swords and beams of fire, which whirl as the orb whirls, and transpierce its otherwise opaque bulk with radiant lightnings. In the light of these incessant shafts all the secrets of the earth's interior, from the circumference to the core, are revealed in continuous translucence:—

Digitized by Google

"Infinite mines of adamant and gold,
Valueless glories, unimagined gems,
And caverns on crystalline columns poised,
With vegetable silver overspread;
Wells of unfathomed fire, and water-springs
Whence the great sea, even as a child, is fed,
Whose vapours clothe earth's monarch mountain-tops
With kingly ermine-snow. The beams flash on
And make appear the melancholy ruins
Of cancelled cycles—anchors, beaks of ships,
Planks turned to marble, quivers, helms, and spears,
And gorgon-headed targes, and the wheels
Of scythèd chariots, and the emblazonry
Of trophies, standards, and armorial beasts—
Round which death laughed; sepulchred emblems
Of dead destruction, ruin within ruin!
The wrecks beside of many a city vast
Whose population which the earth grew over
Was mortal, but not human: see, they lie,
Their monstrous works and uncouth skeletons,
Their statues, homes and fanes—prodigious shapes
Huddled in grey annihilation, split,
Jammed in the hard black deep; and, over these,
The anatomies of unknown wingèd things,
And fishes which were isles of living scale,
And serpents, bony chains, twisted around
The iron crags, or within heaps of dust
To which the tortuous strength of their last pangs
Had crushed the iron crags; and over these
The jagged alligator, and the might
Of earth-convulsing behemoth, which once
Were monarch-beasts, and on the slimy shores
And weed-overgrown continents of earth

Digitized by Google

Increased and multiplied like summer-worms
On an abandoned corpse, till the blue globe
Wrapt deluge round it like a cloak, and they
Yelled, gasped, and were abolished; or some God
Whose throne was in a comet passed and cried
'Be not,' and, like my words, they were no more."

Passages in a different vein might be quoted, as these lines of apophthegm in the "Cenci:"—

"In the great war between the young and old
I, who have white hairs and a tottering body,
Will keep at least blameless neutrality;"

or this fine image:—

"Life, like a dome of many-coloured glass,
Stains the white radiance of eternity."

In some of the rougher political poems—as in the burlesque of *Œdipus Tyrannus*, and in *Peter Bell the Third*—there is even a kind of fierce popular wit, appealing to the coarsest understanding, and intended to do so. Nor is it necessary to refer to those shorter lyrical pieces, *The Sensitive Plant*, *The Cloud*, the *Ode to the Skylark*, &c., which are known even to those who know nothing else of Shelley, and read again and again for their melody,

"Sweet as a singing rain of silver dew."

In others of these lyrical pieces what intensity of pathos! Who that has ever heard Beatrice's wild song

Digitized by Google

in the "Cenci" sung as it should be can forget its plaintive horror?—

"False friend, wilt thou smile or weep
When my life is laid asleep?
Little cares for a smile or a tear
The clay-cold corpse upon the bier.
Farewell! Heigh ho!
What is this whispers low?
There's a snake in thy smile, my dear;
And bitter poison within thy tear."

After all, however, less than almost any other poet, is Shelley to be adequately represented in detached passages. His poetry is like an intellectual ether, that must be breathed and lived in for some time ere its influence can be appreciated. To minds of sufficient culture, who have in this way become acquainted with Shelley's poetry (and only minds of considerable culture are likely ever to read much of it), it has always presented itself as something very peculiar in quality—totally different, for example, from the poetry of Milton, or of Wordsworth, or of Byron, or of any other preceding poet. To this, at least, Shelley's poetry can lay claim—that, whether great or not, whether useful or hurtful in its influence, it is very peculiar.

Retaining for the nonce a distinction, somewhat pedantic in form, and greatly laughed at of late by the lovers of plain English (but which need not be given

Digitized by Google

up, for all that, till the lovers of plain English have provided an exact equivalent), one cannot do better than repeat the observation, often made already, that Shelley belongs to the order of the so-called "subjective" poets, as differing from those called the "objective." The terms do express a real meaning. There are some poets—as, for example, Chaucer, Shakespeare, and Scott—whose poetry consists, in the main, of combinations, more or less complex, of scenery, incident, and character, each fashioned by a kind of wondrous craft out of materials furnished to the imagination by sense, memory, reading, and reflection, and each, as soon as it is fashioned, detached altogether, or nearly so, from the personality of the writer, and sent to float away as a separate creation down the stream of time. In the case of these so-called "objective" poets, it is a problem of the highest difficulty to ascertain the personal character from their works. Out of one set of materials Shakespeare fashions a "Hamlet;" then he sets about a "Macbeth;" then he betakes himself to a "Henry the Fourth," or a "Midsummer Night's Dream;" but whether Shakespeare himself is most in one or in another of these creations, is a matter not to be lightly determined on mere internal evidence. We see those creations separately and successively issuing from Shakespeare's mind, and we know that they were fashioned there by

Digitized by Google

a subtle craft operating upon materials that had been brought into that mind from the surrounding world; but what kind of chamber that mind was—of what glooms, griefs, or distractions it may have been the scene while the labour of creation was going on in it—the works themselves do not accurately inform us. For fifty years the world is amazed and delighted with gorgeous phantasies of colour, representing, as they were never represented before in painting, the phases of universal nature; and, when these phantasies are traced to their source, they are found to be from the hand of a taciturn and slovenly old man, named Turner, shambling about in his slippers in a dusty cobwebby house in London, and reputed by those who knew no better to be very gruff and very avaricious, and to have apparently no other usual human taste than a fondness for port wine. Of course, even in such cases, independent knowledge of the man may enable us to discern him in his works. There *are*, moreover, for critics profound enough in their investigations, subtle laws connecting the imagination with the personality and the life. But any such ultimate connexion, discovered or discoverable, between the personal character of the "objective" poet and the nature of his creations is a far different thing from the obvious relation subsisting between the character of the "subjective" poet and *his* phantasies. Here we are never

Digitized by Google

at a loss. The poetry of the "subjective" poet is nothing else than an effluence from his personality through the medium of his imagination. He has certain fixed ideas, certain permanent moods of mind, certain notions as to what ought to be and what ought not to be; and these ideas, moods, or notions, he works forth into all that he fancies. He preaches while he sings; what he imagines is a revelation of what he wishes. He does not live in a house of stone (to use a figure which, I think, is Mr. Browning's), communicating only by certain chinks and embrasures with the world without, and in which the possessor, while commanding a prospect all round, may keep himself and his own movements concealed. He lives in a house of glass, expressing his feelings as to what he sees in gestures visible to all about him, and employing the poetic art only as a means of flashing his own image and its successive gesticulations to a greater and greater distance. Here too the means of the poetic art correspond with the intention. The "subjective" poet, the poet of fixed ideas—dealing, as it is his tendency to do, not with things as they are in their infinite real complexity, but with the supposed principles of things, the springs or seeds of being,—such a poet may frame his pictures out of the stuff of real life, if he chooses, just as the "objective" poet does; but even then, owing to the invariable meaning which he infuses into

Digitized by Google

them, they will be in one strain, and more or less repetitions of each other. In Byron's poetry, for example, under very various forms, we have still a reproduction of the Byronic type of character. On the whole, however, it will be the tendency of the "subjective" poet of the most determined type not to take his scenery and circumstance from the real or historical world at all—not to hamper himself with the actual relations of time, place, and historical probability—but, as he concerns himself morally with Man in his primal elements, so to deal also with material nature as simplified into its masses and generalizations. In other words, he will lay his scene anywhere in vague time or space; he will make his persons gigantic, mythical, and featureless, and will unfetter the mode of their actions from the ordinary terrestrial laws; and the objects amid which they move he will depict as visual allegories. Hence that well-known deficiency of human interest which often prevents poetry of this kind from being widely popular. Most men like to have their footing on a solid flooring of fact and history, and do not take nearly so much pleasure in a world of a few elemental ingredients and relations, fashioned to illustrate the action of a few supposed springs of being, as they do in representations of the living and moving complexity of our own wrinkled planet.

Digitized by Google

The distinction we have been expounding is, of course, not absolute. It would be difficult to name a poet belonging so purely to one of the orders as to have nothing in him of the other. On the whole, however, Shelley is eminently a "subjective" poet. In his *Cenci*, his *Julian and Maddalo*, and one or two other poems, he does make it his aim to represent historical occurrences, and scenes and feelings as they are found in actual life. But, in the main, he is a poet of fixed ideas—a poet dealing incessantly with the seeds and springs of being, and illustrating his notions of these in imaginations of an arbitrary and mythological character. His Poetry is, in fact, a kind of air-hung Mythology, shadowing forth the essential principles of a creed which might be called Shelleyism. What this creed was we have already partly seen in our sketch of his life; but a word or two more may be added.

At one time Shelley had, as he tells us himself, been a Materialist in philosophy. That is to say, he regarded the universe as consisting of an original basis or consolidation of matter of the kind called Inorganic, upon which there had been reared, or out of which there had somehow grown, a quantity of other and more highly developed matter of the kind called Organic, ascending in a hierarchy of forms, with Man

Digitized by Google

at the apex. According to this philosophy, in thinking of the universe, one is bound to think of matter and of nothing else—matter lying dead and obdurate, or matter pervaded by electricities, nerve-forces, and what not, so as to be locomotive, sensitive, active, and reflective. But this philosophy Shelley had soon and very decidedly abandoned; and, instead of it, he had taken up what is called the system of Idealism. According to this philosophy—which he had got at through Hume and Berkeley, and partly through Plato,—not Matter, but Thought, is the fundamental reality of the universe. Everything is thought; nothing exists but in and through thought. What we call external objects, what we call matter itself, is but thought of a certain quantity and variety, distinguished from thought recognised as such by certain accidents of force, frequency, and the like. Thoughts in certain successions, and in certain degrees of intensity: that is all we know anything of. The universe is but a certain coagulation or huge bubble-mountain of thoughts—the harder and more coagulated parts of the mass, crushed by the gravity of the others, constituting what we call matter, and forming a permanent basis for all; and the rest ascending in successive stages of tenuity till they end in the ether of once-imagined whimsies. But, this being the case, it follows that the universe may be continually added to and disturbed

Digitized by Google

in its fabric. Thoughts being things, and the mind having the power of pouring forth a constant succession of new thoughts, these really rush into the fabric of the past accumulation, and, in adjusting themselves and finding their places, disturb its porosity, and keep it continually agitated. Above all, the poet, whose very business it is to send forth new imaginations of a great and impressive character, is thus always agitating, disturbing, and remodelling creation. This is a doctrine which Shelley is perpetually repeating in his prose-writings. "Imagination," he says, "or mind employed prophetically in imaging forth its objects, is the faculty of human nature on which every gradation of its progress—nay, every, the minutest, change—depends." According to Shelley, all the thoughts of all minds are adding to and altering the universe; but it is the business of the poet, by certain splendid precalculated imaginations, either softly to disintegrate the mass of previously accumulated existence, so that it shall fall into new arrangements, or sometimes to convulse, crack, and rend this mass by the blast of a wholesome explosion through what was previously a chaos. The Poet would thus be pre-eminently the Reformer.

So far we have but the theoretical side of Shelley's system. The difficulty is to see how, when he had risen theoretically to the extreme of his Idealism, he

Digitized by Google

turned in mid-air, and came back on the world in a scheme of practical reason. Admit the universe to be a coagulation of old thoughts, modifiable by new ones, what *kinds* of new thoughts will make the right and desirable modification? What is the principle, what the rule, what the right and wrong, in thought? The poet, as the reformer-in-chief for the human race, has to employ himself in splendid pre-calculated imaginations, which, rushing forth from him, shall softly arrange things in new harmonies, or violently split their way with revolutionary force! Well, wherein consists the splendour to be desired in these imaginations, and on what principles are they to be precalculated? Here, as is often the case with philosophers, there is a gap in which we cannot see the links connecting Shelley's theoretical or ascending with his practical or descending reason. But he *has* a practical system, and a very definite one. Unlike Hume, he ascends to the extreme of Idealism, not to end in indifference or scepticism, but to descend again all the more vehemently upon the world of man and life, armed with a faith. He speaks, indeed, of Deity, and other such ideas, as being only "the modes in which thoughts are combined;" but it is evident, whatever he calls them, that it is only the presence or the absence of certain ideas of this class that constitutes, in his view, the difference between the right and the

Digitized by Google

wrong, between the splendid and the mean, in thought. Thoughts combined *so* are eternally noble and good; thoughts combined *otherwise* are eternally ignoble and bad—no man ever cherished a belief of this kind more passionately than Shelley. No man, therefore, had more of the essence of an absolute ethical faith, of a faith not fabricated out of experience, but structurally derived from an authority in the invisible. Theoretically an idealist, he was morally a fanatic. "I have confidence in my moral sense alone, for that is a kind of originality," is one of his own significant sayings. His whole life is an illustration. His brief existence in the world was one continued shriek about love and justice. He had "a passion," he says, "for reforming the world." Nor was it a superficial reform that he contemplated. From first to last, as he thought, human society had been an aggregate of wrong and corruption. Kings, priests, and governments had filled the earth with misery. Bound by sophisms and slavish fears, men and women were living defrauded of their natural rights, and out of their natural relations.

"Kings, priests, and statesmen blast the human flower
Even in its tender bud; their influence darts,
Like subtle poison, through the bloodless veins
Of desolate society."

But this state of things is not to last for ever! There

Digitized by Google

will one day be a reign of truth and love, of justice and social equality!

"Spirit of Nature! thou
Life of interminable multitudes,
Soul of those mighty spheres
Whose changeless paths through Heaven's deep silence lie,
Soul of that smallest being
The dwelling of whose life
Is one faint April sun-gleam—
Man, like these passive things,
Thy will unconsciously fulfilleth:
Like theirs, his age of endless peace,
Which Time is fast maturing,
Will swiftly, surely, come;
And the unbounded frame which thou pervadest
Will be without a flaw
Marring its perfect symmetry."

This is Shelley's fixed faith, the burthen of all his poetry. It was his own aim as a poet to send forth sounds that might shake the reign of "Anarch Custom," and hasten the blessed era in whose coming he believed. Nor was it only on the great scale that he desired to be a prophet of love and justice. He was to carry out his principle to its minutest applications, promoting every movement for the mitigation of social or individual suffering, and so constituting himself, as well in literature as in action, what nature, in framing him so delicately, had fitted him to be—

Digitized by Google

"A nerve o'er which might creep
The else unfelt oppressions of this earth."

Here we recur to a question already opened. Whatever Shelley's formal affirmations respecting the doctrines of Deity and Immortality might be, it is clear that the fanatical intensity of his ethical creed implied a habit of viewing the world from a point out of itself, and by the rule of ideas not belonging to it. Had his principle been "to apprehend no farther than this world," why such spasm, why such wailing, such rage against universal wrong, such frantic longing to refashion human nature from its very roots? On such a principle, it is true, a man might be so far a reformer. He might seek to correct the earth by itself, the part by the knowledge of the whole, social evils in Asia by the experience of Europe. But for a man to start up and proclaim the whole past movement of humanity to have been wrong, and to propose to arrest it, and shift its very wheels, is a different matter. This was Shelley's proposition. He did not propose only that the world should be corrected by itself, the part by the whole, but that it should be corrected by a rule eternal and immutable, which he sometimes called love or justice, and sometimes the spirit of universal nature. There *was* a Heart beating somewhere, to whose pulsations the earth as a whole was rebel, but which would yet subdue the earth to unison with it; and, meanwhile, the agents of

Digitized by Google

good and the harbingers of the final harmony were to be those imaginations of man which, by relating themselves to this Heart, were to be prematurely in unison with it, and at war with the earth and its customs. Nothing short of this belief, however he phrased it, was the principle of Shelley's practical philosophy. Seeing that it was so, might not we say that, like his own Prometheus, he had tipped his reed with stolen fire?

Argument and metaphysics apart, there is, at least, no way in which the *fancy* may more easily apprehend the peculiarity of Shelley's genius than by thinking of him as one who surveyed the world not from a point within it or on it, but from a point in distant space. Better still, perhaps, one might think of him as not a native of the earth at all, but some fluttering spirit of a lighter sphere, that had dropped on the earth by chance, unable to be in happy relation to it as a whole, though keenly sensitive to some of its beauties. Were our science of pedigree worth anything, it might save us the necessity of any such figure. Remembering that the year of Shelley's birth was that of the utmost agony of the French Revolution, when convulsion was shaking all things established, and new social principles were everywhere abroad, we might then have a glimmering how it happened that the genius of the time took a whim to appear even in Sussex, and bespeak as

Digitized by Google

one of its incarnations the child of a commonplace English baronet, who had never bargained for such an honour. But, unable to make anything to the purpose of such a scientific fancy, we may resort to the other. Shelley's personal friends used to resort to it. "I used to tell him," says Leigh Hunt, "that he had come from the planet Mercury." One may vary the form of the fancy; and, though the pale planet Mercury, the sickly darling of the sun, seems such an orb as Shelley might have come from, had he come from any, it might be fitter to fancy that he had come from none, but, till till he touched our earth, had been winging about in unsubstantial ether. When Milton's rebel host left the celestial realms, angels flocking on angels and the great Archangel leading, might we not suppose that some small seraph, who had joined the rebellion, lagged behind the rest in his flight, became detached from them by regret or weakness, and, unable to overtake them, was left to flutter disconsolate and alone amid the starry spaces? Excluded from Heaven, but not borne down with the rest into Pandemonium, if this creature did at last come near our orb in his wanderings, might it not become his refuge; and then might we not suppose that, though retaining the principle of rebellion—so that, when the Highest was named, he would shriek against the name—yet his recollections of his original would be purer, and his nature less impaired, than if,

Digitized by Google

instead of transparent space, populous Pandemonium had been his intermediate home?

Whatever form we give to the fancy, the characteristics of Shelley's poetry are such as to accord with it. Intense as is his ethical spirit, his desire to act upon man and society, his imagination cannot work with things as he finds them, with the actual stuff of historical life. His mode of thinking is not according to the terrestrial conditions of time, place, cause and effect, variety of race, climate, and costume. His persons are shapes, winged forms, modernized versions of Grecian mythology, or mortals highly allegorized; and their movements are vague, swift, and independent of ordinary physical laws. In the *Revolt of Islam*, for example, the story is that of two lovers who career through the plains and cities of an imaginary kingdom on a Tartar horse, or skim over leagues of ocean in a boat whose prow is of moonstone. But for the *Cenci*, and one or two other pieces, one would say that Shelley had scarcely any aptitude for the historical. Even in his sensuous imagery the same arbitrariness is apparent. His landscapes, like his persons, are a sort of allegories. His true poetical element, where alone he takes things as he finds them, is the atmosphere. Shelley is preeminently the poet of what may be called meteorological circumstance. He is at home among winds, mists, rains, snows, clouds gorgeous-

Digitized by Google

ly coloured, glories of sunrise, nights of moonshine, lightnings, streamers, and falling stars; and what of vegetation and geology he brings in is but as so much that might be seen by an aerial creature in its ascents and descents. His poetry is full of direct and all but conscious suggestions of this. Need we cite, as one, his *Ode to the Skylark*, that "scorner of the ground," whose skill he covets for the poet? Then there is his lyric of *The Cloud*:—

"I bring fresh showers for the thirsting flowers,
For the seas and the streams;
I bear light shade for the leaves when laid
In their noon-day dreams;
From my wings are shaken the dews that waken
The sweet birds every one,
When rocked to rest on their mother's breast
As she dances about the sun;
I wield the flail of the lashing hail,
And whiten the green plains under,
And then again I dissolve in rain,
And laugh as I pass in thunder."

Again in his *Invocation to the West Wind*, in which, expressly imploring it to be *his* spirit, he dedicates himself, as it were, to the meteorological for ever:—

"O wild West Wind, thou breath of Autumn's being,
Thou from whose unseen presence the leaves dead
Are driven, like ghosts from an enchanter fleeing,
* * * * * *
Make me thy lyre, even as the forest is!

Digitized by Google

What if my leaves are falling like its own?
The tumult of thy mighty harmonies

Will take from both a deep autumnal tone,
Sweet though in sadness. Be thou, spirit fierce,
My spirit! Be thou *me*, impetuous one!

Drive my dead thoughts over the universe,
Like withered leaves, to quicken a new birth;
And, by the incantation of this verse,

Scatter, as from an unextinguished hearth
Ashes and sparks, my words among mankind!
Be through my lips to unawakened earth

The trumpet of a prophecy! O wind,
If Winter comes, can Spring be far behind?

Digitized by Google

IV.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF KEATS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

IV.

THE LIFE AND POETRY OF KEATS.[1]

KEATS was born in Moorfields, London, in October 1795, the son of a livery-stable keeper of some wealth, who had attained that position by marrying his master's daughter and so succeeding him in the business. There were five children, four sons and a daughter, of whom John was the third. The father, who is described as an active, energetic little man of much natural talent, was killed by a fall from a horse at the age of thirty-six, when Keats was in his ninth year; and the care of the children devolved upon the mother, a tall, large-featured woman, of considerable force of character. There was also a maternal uncle, a very tall, strong, and courageous man, who had been in the navy, had served under Duncan at Camperdown, and had done extraordinary feats in the way of fighting. Partly in emulation of this uncle, partly

[1] *Macmillan's Magazine*, November 1860.

Digitized by Google

from constitutional inclination, the boys were always fighting too—in the house, about the stables, or out in the adjacent streets, with each other, or with anybody else. John, though the shortest for his years, and the most like his father, was the most pugnacious of the lot; but with his pugnacity he combined, it is said, a remarkable sensibility, and a great love of fun. This character he took with him to a boarding-school at Enfield, near London, kept by the father of Mr. Charles Cowden Clarke, then also a boy, not much older than Keats, receiving his education under his father's roof. At school, Keats, according to the recollections of Mr. Clarke and others of his schoolfellows, was at first a perfect little terrier for resoluteness and pugnacity, but very placable and frolicsome, very much liked, and, though not particularly studious, very quick at learning. There would seem to have been more of pleasant sociability between the family of the master and the scholars in the school at Enfield, and more of literary talk at bye-hours, than were then common at private English schools. At all events, when, by the death of his mother, of lingering consumption, in 1810, the guardianship of Keats, his two surviving brothers, and his only sister, devolved on a Mr. Abbey, a London merchant who had known the family, and when Mr. Abbey thought it best to take two of the boys from school and apprentice them to

Digitized by Google

professions, it was felt by Keats to be a very happy arrangement that he was apprenticed to a surgeon-apothecary at Edmonton, so near to Enfield that he could still go over when he liked to see the Clarkes. He was then fifteen years of age. His share of the family property, held for him by his guardian till he came of age, was about 2,000*l.*; and his apprenticeship was to last five years.

From Edmonton Keats was continually walking over to Enfield to see his young friend, Cowden Clarke, and to borrow books. It was some time in 1812 that he borrowed Spenser's *Faery Queene.* The effect was immediate and extraordinary. "He ramped," says Mr. Clarke, "through the scenes of the romance;" he would talk of nothing but Spenser; he had whole passages by heart, which he would repeat; and he would dwell with an ecstasy of delight on fine particular phrases, such as "the sea-shouldering whale." His first known poetical composition (he was then seventeen) was a piece expressly entitled "In Imitation of Spenser."

> "Now Morning from her orient chamber came,
> And her first footsteps touch'd a verdant hill,
> Crowning its lawny crest with amber flame,
> Silvering the untainted gushes of its rill;
> Which, pure from mossy beds," &c.

From that moment it seemed as if Keats lived only

Digitized by Google

to read poetry and to write it. From Spenser he went to Chaucer, from Chaucer to Milton, and so on and on, with ever-widening range, through all our sweeter and greater poets. He luxuriated in them by himself; he talked about them, and read parts of them aloud to his friends; he became a critic of their thoughts, their words, their rhymes, their cadences. His chief partner in these tastes was Mr. Cowden Clarke, with whom he would take walks, or sit up whole evenings, discoursing of poets and poetry; and he acknowledges, in one of his metrical epistles, the influence which Mr. Clarke had in forming his literary likings. Above all, it was Mr. Clarke that first introduced him to any knowledge of ancient Greek poetry. This was effected by lending him Chapman's Homer, his first acquaintance with which, and its effects on him, are celebrated in one of the finest and best-known of his sonnets. Thenceforward Greek poetry, so far as it was accessible to him in translation, had peculiar fascinations for him. By similar means he became fondly familiar with some of the softer Italian poets, and with the stories of Boccaccio. It was noted by one of his friends that his preferences at this time, whether in English or in other poetry, were still for passages of sweet, sensuous description, or of sensuous-ideal beauty, such as are to be found in the minor poems of Milton, Shakespeare and Chaucer, and

Digitized by Google

in Spenser throughout, and that he rarely seemed to dwell with the same enthusiasm on passages of fervid feeling, of severe reference to life, or of powerful human interest. At this time, in fact, his feeling for poetry was very much that of an artist in language, observing effects which particularly delighted him, and studying them with a professional admiration of the exquisite. He brooded over fine phrases like a lover; and often, when he met a quaint or delicious word in the course of his reading, he would take pains to make it his own by using it, as speedily as possible, in some poem he was writing. Ah! those days of genial, enjoying youth, when, over the fire, with a book in one's hand, one got fine passages by heart, and, in walks with one or two choice companions, there was an opening of the common stock, and hours and miles were whiled away with tit-bits of recent reading from a round of favourite poets! Those were the days when books were books; and it is a fact to be remembered, as regards literature, that one half of the human race is always under the age of twenty-one.

Before Keats's apprenticeship was over, it was pretty clear to himself and his friends that he would not persevere in becoming a surgeon. In the year 1816, when he came from Edmonton to London, at the age of twenty, he did indeed enter himself as a student at the hospitals; but he very soon gave up attending

Digitized by Google

them, and found more agreeable employment in the society of Leigh Hunt, Shelley, Godwin, Dilke, Ollier, the painter Haydon, Hazlitt, Charles Armitage Brown, and others whose names are less remembered. In this society of artists and men of letters—forming, so far as the literary ingredient was concerned, the so-called "Cockney School," as distinct from the "Lakists" of the North of England, and from the Edinburgh men who gave both of them their names—Keats at once took a prominent place, less on account of what he had actually done than on the promise of what he was to be. On first settling in London, he had taken lodgings in the Poultry, in the heart of the City; but, as soon as he had abandoned the idea of following the medical profession, he removed to Hampstead, a suburb of London as you approach it from the north.

London, with all the evils resulting from its vastness, has suburbs as rich and beautiful, after the English style of scenery, as any in the world; and even now, despite the encroachments of the ever-encroaching brick and mortar on the surrounding country, the neighbourhood of Hampstead and Highgate, near London, is one in which the lover of natural beauty and the solitary might well delight. The ground is much the highest round London; there are real heights and hollows, so that the omnibuses

Digitized by Google

coming from town have to put on additional horses; you ascend steep roads, lying in part through villages of quaint shops, and old, high-gabled brick houses, still distinct from the great city, though about to be devoured by it—in part through straggling lines of villas, with gardens and grassy parks round them, and here and there an old inn; and, from the highest eminences, when the view is clear, you can see London left behind, a mass of purplish mist, with domes and steeples visible through it. Where the villages end, you are really in the country. There is the Heath, on the Hampstead side—an extensive tract of knolls and little glens, covered here and there with furze, all abloom with yellow in the summer, when the larks may be heard singing over it; threaded here and there by paths with seats in them, or broken by clumps of trees, and blue rusty-nailed palings, which enclose old-fashioned family-houses and shrubberies, where the coachman in livery may be seen talking lazily to the gardener; but containing also sequestered spots where one might wander alone for hours, or lie concealed amid the sheltering furze. At night, Hampstead Heath would be as ghastly a place to wander in as an uneasy spirit could desire. In every hollow, seen in the starlight, one could fancy that there had been a murder; nay, tradition points to spots where foul crimes have been committed, or

Digitized by Google

where, in the dead of night, forgers, who had walked, with discovery on their track, along dark intervening roads, from the hell of lamp-lit London, had lain down and poisoned themselves. In the day, however, and especially on a bright summer day, the scene is open, healthy, and cheerful. On the one side, is a view across a green valley, called "The Vale of Health," to the opposite heights of Highgate; on the other, the eye traverses a flat expanse of fields and meadows, stretching for many miles northward, and looking, in its rich level variety, like a miniature representation of all England. And then the lanes all about and around, leading away from the Heath, deep and steep, between high banks and along the old church and churchyard, and past little ponds and gardens, and often ending in footpaths through fields, where one has to get over stiles!

All this of Hampstead and its vicinity even now [1860]; but, forty years ago, it was still better. At that time London itself was a different city. There was less smoke; there were no steamers on the river; and from the overspanning bridges the water could be seen running clear beneath, with the consciousness of fish in it. Then, too, the conveyance between London and such suburbs as Hampstead and Highgate was not by omnibuses passing every five minutes, but by the old stage-coaches, with their guards and horns,

Digitized by Google

coming and going leisurely twice or thrice a day. In those days, therefore, Hampstead and Highgate were still capable of having an individuality of their own, and of having associations fixed upon them by the occupations of their residents, even though these were in London daily, and were, by their general designation, properly enough, Londoners. Part of their celebrity now, indeed, arises from associations thus formed. Old Leigh Hunt, visiting those scenes not long before his death, would point out the exact wooden seat on the Heath where he and Keats, or where he and Shelley, sat when such and such a poem was recited, or the exact spot in a path through the fields where Coleridge took leave of him and Charles Lamb, to dawdle back to his home at Highgate, and where Lamb, while the departing skirts of the sage were visible, stuttered out some pun about his personal appearance and his last metaphysical monologue. At the particular time of which we are now speaking Leigh Hunt was living at Hampstead, where also lived Mr. Armitage Brown, a retired merchant of literary tastes, and others of whom it is not necessary to take note; and there, in the evenings, at the houses of such men, artists and others would drop in; and then, O ye future critics of *Blackwood* and the *Quarterly*, what wit there would be, what music, what portfolios of sketches and engravings, what white

Digitized by Google

casts from the antique, what talk about poetry and literature! From that time, with scarcely an exception, Hampstead was the London home of Keats—first as a guest of Leigh Hunt, or a lodger near to him; and afterwards, and more permanently, as a guest of Mr. Armitage Brown. Indeed, just as Wordsworth and his associates were supposed to have constituted themselves into a school by retiring to Cumberland and Westmoreland, in order to be in closer relations to nature, as exhibited in that district of lake and mountain, so it might have been suggested maliciously of Keats, Hunt, and the rest of their set, that the difference between them and the elder school was that what *they* called Nature was Nature as seen from Hampstead Heath. As the one set of poets had received from their Edinburgh critics the name of "the Lakists," so, to make the joke correspond, the others, instead of being called "the Cockney Poets," might have been named the Hampstead Heath-ens.

Keats signalized his accession to this peculiar literary group by publishing, in 1817, a little volume of poems, containing some of his sonnets and other pieces now appended to his longer and later compositions. The volume scarcely touched the attention of the public, though it served to show his power to

Digitized by Google

his immediate friends. He was then two-and-twenty years of age; and his appearance was rather singular. Coleridge, who once shook hands with him, when he met him with Hunt in a lane near Highgate, describes him as "a loose, slack, not well-dressed youth." The descriptions of Hunt and others are more particular. He was considerably under middle height, his lower limbs being small, in comparison with the upper, to a degree that marred his whole proportion. His shoulders were very broad for his size; his face was strongly cut, yet delicately mobile, expressing an unusual combination of determination with sensibility; its worst feature being the mouth, which had a projecting upper lip, and altogether a savage pugilistic look. Nor did the look belie him. He had great personal courage, and once took the trouble to thrash a butcher for some insolent conduct in a regular stand-up fight. His hair was brown, and his eyes large, and of a dark, glowing blue. "His head," says Leigh Hunt, "was a puzzle for the phrenologists, "being remarkably small in the skull—a singularity "which he had in common with Byron and Shelley, "whose hats I could not get on." His voice, unlike Shelley's, was deep and grave. His entire expression was that of eager power; and, in contradiction of what was observed of him at an earlier period, he was now easily, though still apparently against his

Digitized by Google

will, betrayed into signs of vehement emotion. "At the recital of a noble action, or a beautiful thought," says Mr. Hunt, "his eyes would suffuse with tears, and his mouth trembled." On hearing of some unmanly conduct, he once burst out, "Why is there not a human dust-hole into which to tumble such fellows?" Evidently ill-health, as well as imaginative temperament, had to do with this inability to restrain tears and other signs of agitated feeling. His mother had died of consumption at a comparatively early age; his younger brother, Tom, was already far gone in the same fatal malady; and, though there was as yet no distinct symptom of consumption in Keats, he was often flushed and feverish, and had his secret fears. He had many hours of sprightliness, however, when those fears would vanish, and he would be full of frolic and life. In allusion to this occasional excess of fun and animal spirits, his friends punned upon his name, shortening it from "John Keats" into "Junkets." Still, amid all—in his times of despondency, as well as in his seasons of hope—Poetry was his ceaseless thought, and to be a Poet his one ambition:—

> "O for ten years, that I may overwhelm
> Myself in Poesy! So I may do the deed
> That my own soul has to itself decreed!"

Digitized by Google

Of what *kind* this intended deed was we have also some indication. Like all the fresher young poets of his time, Keats had imbibed, partly from constitutional predisposition, partly from conscious reasoning, that theory of Poetry which, for more than twenty years, Wordsworth had been disseminating by precept and by example through the literary mind of England. This theory, in its historical aspect, I will venture to call *Pre-Drydenism*. Its doctrine, historically, was that the age of true English Poetry was the period anterior to Dryden—the period of Chaucer, Spenser, Shakespeare, Fletcher, and Milton—and that, with a few exceptions, the subsequent period, from Dryden inclusively down to the time of Wordsworth's own appearance as a poet, had been a prosaic interregnum, during which what passed for poetry was either an inflated style of diction which custom had rendered pleasing, or, at best, shrewd sense and wit, or miscellaneous cogitation, more or less weighty, put into metre.

Take an example. Here are two stanzas from a well-known paraphrase of Scripture, still sung in churches over a large part of the kingdom.

"In life's gay morn, when sprightly youth
With vital ardour glows,
And shines in all the fairest charms
Which beauty can disclose,

Digitized by Google

Deep on thy soul, before its powers
Are yet by vice enslaved,
Be thy Creator's glorious name
And character engraved."

How remorselessly Wordsworth would have torn this passage to pieces—as, indeed, he did a similar paraphrase of Scripture by Dr. Johnson! "Life's gay morn!" "sprightly youth!" he would have said,—meaningless expressions, used because it is considered poetical to stick an adjective before every noun, and "gay" and "sprightly" are adjectives conveniently in stock! Then, "sprightly youth with vital ardour glows"—what is this but slip-shod; and, besides, why tug the verb to the end of the phrase and say "with vital ardour glows," instead of "glows with vital ardour," as you would do in natural speech? O, of course, the rhyme! Yes; but who asked you to rhyme at all, in the first place? and, in the next place, if you were bent on rhyming, and found "ardour" would not suit at the end of your precious line, that was *your* difficulty, not mine! What are you a poet for but to overcome such difficulties, or what right have you to extract the rhythms and rhymes that you want in your craft as a versifier from the mere torture of honest prose? And then, worse and worse, "Youth," already "glowing," with this "vital ardour," also, it seems, "shines,"

Digitized by Google

and (marvellous metaphor!) shines "with charms"—which "charms" (metaphor still more helpless!) are "the fairest charms disclosed by beauty!" And so on he would have gone, pointing out the flaws of meaning and of expression in the next stanza in the same stern manner. Pass, he would have said at last, from this poor jingle of words to the simple and beautiful text of which it is offered as a paraphrase: "Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them." The defects, he would have continued, seen on a small scale in the foregoing metrical version of this passage, were visible throughout the whole course of English poetry after Milton—with here and there, as in Thomson and Dyer, a remarkable exception. There was then no faithfulness to fact in description or in imagery from nature, no natural speech in verse, nothing save more or less of intellectual vigour exhibited through an artificial form of diction, to which men had grown so accustomed that they had ceased to inspect it logically. Even men of real genius, such as Dryden himself and Pope, were, in the bulk of their writings, but splendid practitioners of a false style, which, when people had been educated to see its viciousness, would mar their fame as poets.

I am not here *discussing* Wordsworth's theory; I

Digitized by Google

am only *stating* it. Keats, I repeat, had adopted this theory, if not in all its particulars, at least in its essence. Thus, in one of his pieces, after speaking of the greatness of his old favourite English poets, he says—

"Could all this be forgotten? Yes, a schism
Nurtured by foppery and barbarism
Made great Apollo blush for this his land.
Men were thought wise who could not understand
His glories: with a puling infant's force
They sway'd about upon a rocking-horse
And thought it Pegasus. Ah, dismal-soul'd!
The winds of heaven blew, the ocean roll'd
Its gathering waves;—ye felt it not. The blue
Bared its eternal bosom, and the dew
Of summer-night collected still to make
The morning precious; Beauty was awake!
Why were *ye* not awake? But ye were dead
To things ye knew not of,—were closely wed
To musty laws, lined out with wretched rule
And compass vile; so that ye taught a school
Of dolts to smoothe, inlay, and clip and fit,
Till, like the certain wands of Jacob's wit,
Their verses tallied. Easy was the task:
A thousand handicraftsmen wore the mask
Of poesy. Ill-fated, impious race!
That blasphemed the bright Lyrist to his face,
And did not know it! No, they went about,
Holding a poor decrepit standard out,
Mark'd with most flimsy mottoes, and, in large,
The name of one Boileau!"

Digitized by Google

Keats, then, was a Pre-Drydenist in his notions of poetry, and in his own intentions as a poetic artist. But I will say more. Wordsworth had then so far conquered the opposition through which he had been struggling that a modified Pre-Drydenism was universally diffused through English literary society, and the so-called Cockney, or Hampstead-Heath School, with whom accident had associated Keats, were largely tinged with it. They did not, indeed, go all the length with Wordsworth in depreciating Dryden and Pope (as who could?); but a superior relish for the older poets was one of their avowed characteristics. But in this, I believe, Keats went beyond the rest of them. It may be perceived, I think, that, with all his esteem for Hunt and Shelley, both as kind personal friends and as poets, he had notions respecting himself which led him, even while in their society and accounted one of them, to fix his gaze with steadier reverence than they did on the distant veteran of Rydal Mount. To Wordsworth alone does he seem to have looked as, all in all, a sublimity among contemporary poets.

So far, however, as Keats had yet been publicly heard of, it was only as one fledgling more in the brood of poets whose verses were praised in the *Examiner*. The things he had yet published were but little studies in language and versification, preparatory

Digitized by Google

to something that could be called a poem. Such a poem he now resolved to write. Always drawn by a kind of mental affinity to the sensuous Mythology of the Greeks, he had chosen for his subject the legend of Endymion, the youthful lover of the moon-goddess Artemis. "A long poem," he said, "is the test of invention; and it will be a test of my invention if I can make 4,000 lines out of this one bare circumstance, and fill them with poetry." To accomplish his task, he left London in the spring of 1817, and took up his abode first in the Isle of Wight, then at Margate (in both of which places he revelled in the views of the sea as a newly-found pleasure), and then, successively, at Canterbury, Oxford, and other places inland. In the winter of 1817–18 he returned to Hampstead with the four books of his *Endymion* completed. The absence of seven or eight months, during which this poem was written, was also the period in which many of those letters to his friends were written that have been edited by Mr. Monckton Milnes, in his Memoir of the poet. These letters have hardly received the attention they deserve. They are very remarkable letters. One can see, indeed, that they are the letters of an intellectual invalid, of a poor youth too conscious of "the endeavour of this present breath," watching incessantly his own morbid symptoms, and communicating them to his friends.

Digitized by Google

There is also in them a somewhat unnatural straining after quaint and facetious conceits, as if he would not write common-place, but would force himself by the mere brief rumination of the moment into some minute originality or whim of fancy. On the whole, however, with the proper allowance, the letters may be read without any injury to the highest notion of him that may be formed from his compositions that were meant for publication; and there have not been many young poets of whose casual letters as much could be said. They abound in shrewd observations, in delicate and subtle criticisms, in fine touches of description, and in thoughts of a philosophical kind that are at once comprehensive and deep.

"*Endymion: A Poetic Romance*" appeared in the beginning of 1818. Its reception was not wholly satisfactory. It made Keats's name more widely known; it procured him visits and invitations; and, when he attended Hazlitt's lectures, ladies to whom he was pointed out looked at him instead of listening to the lecturer. But Hunt, Shelley, and the rest, though they admired the poem, and thought some passages in it very wonderful, had many faults to find. The language in many parts was juvenile, not to say untasteful; such phrases as "honey-feel of bliss" were too frequent; it was impossible for any understanding of a rational sort

Digitized by Google

to reconcile itself to such a bewildering plenitude of luxuriant invention raised on such a mere nothing of a basis; and, on the whole, there was too evident a waywardness in the sequence of the thoughts, arising from a passive dependence of the matter at every point on the mere suggestion of the rhyme! These and other such objections were heard on all hands. Worst of all, Wordsworth had no approbation to give. At Haydon's, one evening, when Wordsworth was present, Keats was induced to repeat to him the famous Hymn to Pan, which Shelley had praised as that in the whole poem which "gave the surest sign of ultimate excellence." The iron-grey poet heard it to the end, and then only remarked that it was "a pretty piece of paganism." And so, with no more encouragement than usually falls to the lot of a young man in such cases, Keats had to keep his own counsel, and look forward to other works, in which, choosing more solid subjects, he should exert his powers more compactly and impressively, and win, by better-disciplined strokes, the recognition which the world yields so slowly to forms of genius differing from those to which it has been accustomed. His was certainly a new faculty, which had to create and educate the taste by which it should itself be appreciated; and his hope, therefore, lay with the body of the growing youth of the land, whose perpetual privilege it is that they alone can receive and enjoy without criticising. No man

Digitized by Google

was ever fully and heartily accepted, among his own sex, except by those younger than himself.

Keats, there is no doubt, was prepared to wait and work on. The story of his having been killed by the savage article in the *Quarterly* is proved to have been wholly untrue. He had sense enough and courage enough to get over that chagrin within the usual period of twenty-four hours, which, if there is any use for human spirits in the earth's rotation, ought to bring them as well as other things round again to the *status quo*. But other causes were at work, some of which are but dimly revealed by his biographer, but the chief of which was his hereditary malady of consumption. In the winter of 1819–20 he was seized with the fatal blood-spitting he had long dreaded; after a few months of lingering, during which he seemed partly to fight with Death as one to whom life was precious, partly to long to die as one who had nothing to live for, he was removed to Italy; and there, having suffered much, he breathed his last at Rome on the 23d of February, 1821, at the age of twenty-five years and four months. He had wished for "ten years" of poetic life, but not half that term had been allowed him. The sole literary event of his life, after the publication of his *Endymion* in 1818, had been the publication of his *Lamia, The Eve of St. Agnes, and Other Poems,* in 1820; and the sole variation of his manner of life had consisted in his

Digitized by Google

leaving Hampstead for a ramble or a residence in the country, and returning again from the country to Hampstead or London.

After all, whether a man is a poet, a philosopher, or a man of action, there *is* a common standard by which he may be tried, so as to measure his relative intellectual importance. The determination of this standard is difficult; but ultimately, I believe, the truest measure of every man, in intellectual respects, is the measure of his speculative or purely philosophical faculty. So far as this may be demurred to, the objection will arise, I fancy, from the practical difficulty of applying the test. It is only certain poets that give us the opportunity of judging of the strength of their rational or purely *noetic* organ—that faculty by which men speculate, or frame what are called "thoughts" or "propositions." Whenever this is done, however, then, *cæteris paribus*, the deeper thinker is the greater poet. Hence it is an excellent thing for the critic to catch his poet writing prose. He has him then at his mercy; he can keep him in the trap, and study him through the bars at his leisure. If he is a poor creature, he will be found out; if he has genuine vigour, then, with all allowance for any ungainliness arising from his being out of his proper element, there will be evidences of it. Now, tried by any test of this kind,

Digitized by Google

Keats will be found to have been no weakling. The following passages from his prose letters, for example, are, I believe, thoughts of pith and substance, whether absolutely true or not:—

"Men of Genius are great as certain ethereal chemicals operating on the mass of neutral intellect, but they have not any individuality, any determined character. I would call the top and head of those who have a proper self Men of Power."

"Men should bear with each other; there is not the man who may not be cut up, ay, lashed to pieces, on his weakest side. The best of men have but a portion of good in them—a kind of spiritual yeast in their frames which creates the ferment of existence—by which a man is propelled to act and strive and buffet with circumstance. The sure way is, first to know a man's faults, and then be passive. If, after that, he insensibly draws you towards him, then you have no power to break the link."

"I had, not a dispute, but a disquisition, with Dilke upon various subjects. Several things dovetailed in my mind, and at once it struck me what quality went to form a man of achievement, especially in literature, and which Shakespeare possessed so enormously—I mean *negative capability;* that is, when a man is capable of being in uncertainties, mysteries, doubts, without any irritable reaching after fact and reason. . . . This, pursued through volumes, would perhaps take us no farther than this—that, with a great poet, the sense of beauty overcomes every other consideration, or rather obliterates every other consideration."

Digitized by Google

"An extensive knowledge is necessary to thinking people: it takes away the heat and fever, and helps, by widening speculation, to ease the burden of the mystery."

"Axioms in philosophy are not axioms till they have been proved upon our pulses."

"I compare human life to a large mansion of many apartments; two of which only I can describe—the doors of the rest being as yet shut upon me. The first we step into we call the Infant or Thoughtless Chamber; in which we remain as long as we do not think. We remain there a long while, and, notwithstanding the doors of the second chamber remain wide open, showing a bright appearance, we care not to hasten to it, but are imperceptibly impelled by the awakening of the thinking principle within us. We no sooner get into the second chamber, which I shall call the Chamber of Maiden Thought, than we become intoxicated with the light and the atmosphere. We see nothing but pleasant wonders, and think of delaying there for ever in delight. However, among the effects this breathing is father of, is that tremendous one of sharpening one's vision into the heart and nature of man, of convincing one's nerves that the world is full of misery and heart-break, pain, sickness, and oppression; whereby this Chamber of Maiden Thought becomes gradually darkened, and, at the same time, on all sides of it, many doors are set open, but all dark—all leading to dark passages. We see not the balance of good and evil; we are in a mist; we feel the 'Burden of the Mystery.' To this point was Wordsworth come, as far as I can conceive, when he wrote *Tintern Abbey:* and it seems to me that his

Digitized by Google

genius is explorative of those dark passages. Now, if we live and go on thinking, we too shall explore them. He is a genius, and superior to us in so far as he can, more than we, make discoveries, and shed a light on them."

As the aphorisms and casual spurts of speculation of a youth of twenty-two (and all the passages I have quoted are from letters of his written before his twenty-third year), these, I think, are sufficient proof that Keats had an intellect from which his superiority in some literary walk or other might have been surely anticipated.

What we independently know enables us to say that it was pre-eminently as a poet that he was fitted to be distinguished. He was constitutionally a poet, one of those minds in whom, to speak generally, Imagination or Ideality is the sovereign faculty. But, as we had occasion to explain in the paper on Shelley, there are two recognised orders of poets, each of which has its representatives in our literature —that order, called "subjective," to which Shelley himself belonged, and whose peculiarity it is that their poems are vehicles for certain fixed ideas lying in the minds of their authors, outbursts of their personal character, impersonations under shifting guises of their wishes, feelings and beliefs; and that order, on the other hand, distinguished as "objective," who

Digitized by Google

simply fashion their creations by a kind of inventive craft working amid materials supplied by sense, memory, and reading, without the distinct infusion of any element of personal opinion. To this latter order, as I said, belong Chaucer, Shakespeare, and Scott. Now, indubitably, Keats, by the bulk of his poetry, belongs to this order too. The contrast between him and Shelley, in this respect, is complete. Contemporaries and friends, they were poets of quite opposite schools and tendencies; and, so far as they were repelled by each other's poetry (which they were to a certain extent, despite their friendship), it arose from this circumstance. Unlike the feminine and ethereal Shelley, whose whole life was a shrill supernatural shriek in behalf of certain principles, Keats was a slack, slouching youth, with a thick torso, a deep grave voice, and no fixed principles. He had, as we have seen, his passing spurts of speculation, but he had no system of philosophy. So far as religious belief was concerned, he had no wish to disturb existing opinions and institutions, partly because he had really no such quarrel with them as Shelley had, partly because he had no confidence in his ability to dogmatise on such points. In politics, away from his personal connections, he was rather conservative than otherwise. He thought the Liverpool-and-Castlereagh policy very bad and oppres-

Digitized by Google

sive; but he did not expect that his friends, the Liberals, would bring things very much nearer to the millennium; and he distinctly avows that he was not, like some of his friends, a Godwin-perfectibility man, or an admirer of America as an advance beyond Europe. In short, he kept aloof from opinion, doctrine, controversy, as by a natural instinct; he was most at home in the world of sense and imagery, where it was his pleasure to weave forth phantasies; and, if his intelligence did now and then indulge in a discursive flight, it was but by way of exercise, or because opinions, doctrines, and controversies may be considered as facts, and therefore as materials to be worked into poetic language.

In quoting from Keats's letters I have purposely selected passages showing that such was not only his practice, but also his theory. His very principle of poetry, it will be observed, almost amounts to this, that the poet should have no principles. The distinction he makes between men of genius and men of power is that the action of the former is like that of an ethereal chemical, a subtle imponderable, passing forth on diverse materials and rousing their affinities, whereas the latter impress by their solid individuality. So, again, when he speaks of the quality that forms men for great literary achievement as being what he calls a "negative capability"—a power of remaining,

Digitized by Google

and, as it were, luxuriously lolling, in doubts, mysteries, and half-solutions, toying with them, and tossing them, in all their complexity, into forms of beauty, instead of piercing on narrowly and in pain after truth absolute and inaccessible. A Wordsworth, he admits, might have a genius of the explorative or mystery-piercing kind, and might come back from his excursions into the region of the metaphysical with handfuls of new truth to be worked up into his phantasies. But even *he* might be too dogmatic; and, as for himself, though he might fancy that occasionally he reached the bourn of the mysterious and caught glimpses beyond, it would be presumption to put his half-seeings into speech for others! If any doubt still remains on this head, the following additional passage from one of his letters will set it at rest:—

"As to the poetical character itself (I mean that sort of which, if I am anything, I am a member) it is not *itself;* it has no self; it is everything and nothing; it has no character; it enjoys light and shade; it lives in gusts; it has as much delight in conceiving an Iago as an Imogen. . What shocks the virtuous philosopher delights the chameleon poet. . . . A poet is the most unpoetical thing in existence, because he has no identity; he is continually in, for, and filling, some other body. The sun, the moon, the sea, and men and women who are creatures of impulse, *are* poetical, and have about them an un-

Digitized by Google

changeable attribute; the poet has none, no identity. . . . If, then, he has no self, and if I am a poet, where is the wonder that I should say I would write no more? Might I not at that very instant have been cogitating in the character of Saturn and Ops? It is a wretched thing to confess, but it is a very fact, that not one word I utter can be taken for granted as an opinion growing out of my identical nature. How can it be when I have no nature? When I am in a room with people, if I am free from speculating on creations of my own brain, then not myself goes home to myself, but the identity of every one in the room begins to press in upon me, so that I am in a very little time annihilated."

Only on one subject does he profess to have any fixed opinions—namely, on his own art or craft. "I have not one opinion," he says, "upon anything except matters of taste." This is one of the most startling and significant sayings ever uttered by a man respecting himself.

If I am not mistaken, the definition which Keats here gives of the poetical character corresponds with the notion which is most popular. Though critics distinguish between "subjective" and "objective" poets, and enumerate men in the one class as famous as men in the other, yet, in our more vague talk, we are in the habit of leaving out of view those who are called "subjective" poets, and seeking the typical poet among their "objective" brethren, such as Homer and

Digitized by Google

Shakespeare. How this habit is to be explained—whether it proceeds from a perception that the men of the second order are more truly and purely *poets*, and that the others, though often glorious in poetry, might, in strict science, be referred in half to another genus—I will not inquire. It may be remarked, however, that, be this as it may, it is by no means necessary to go all the length with Keats in the interpretation of his theory, and to fancy that the poet approaching most nearly to the perfect type must be a man having no strong individuality, no permanent moral gesture. Scott, for example, was a man of very distinct character, with a mode of thinking and acting in the society in which he lived as proper to himself as his physiognomy or corporeal figure. So, no doubt, it was with Chaucer and Shakespeare; and Milton, who may, by much of his poetry, be referred to the same order, was a man with a personality to shake a nation. What is meant is that, when they betook themselves from miscellaneous action among their fellows to the exercise of their art, they all, more or less, allowed their personality to melt and fold itself in the imagination. They all, more or less, at such times, stood within themselves, as within a chamber in which their own hopes, convictions, anxieties, and principles lay about neglected, while they plied their mighty craft, like the swing

Digitized by Google

of some gigantic arm, with reference to all without. Keats did the same; only, in his case, the chamber wherein he sat had, by his own confession, very few fixtures or other proper furniture. It was a painter's studio, with very little in it besides the easel.

Still, as cannot be too often repeated, there *are* subtle laws connecting the creations of the most purely artistic poet with his personal character and experience. The imagination, though it seems to fly round and round the personality, and often at a great distance from it, is still attached to it and governed by it in its flight—determined, in its wheelings towards this or that object, by incessant communications from the total mind and reason of which it is at once the efflux, the envoy, and the servitor. Chaucer's poetry would have been different if Chaucer himself had been different; Scott's novels and poems could have been written by no one but a man cast exactly in Scott's mould, even to the bushiness of his eyebrows and the Northumbrian burr of his speech; and, had we the necessary skill in the higher criticism, even the Protean Shakespeare might be chased out of his dramas into his own proper form as he used to walk in the meadows of Stratford-upon-Avon. So also with the poetry of Keats. Impersonal as it is in comparison with such poetry as Shelley's, it has yet a certain assemblage of characteristics, which

Digitized by Google

the reader learns to recognise as distinctive; and these it owes to the character of its author.

At the foundation of the character of Keats lay an extraordinary keenness of all the bodily sensibilities and the mental sensibilities which depend upon them. He led, in great part, a life of passive sensation, of pleasure and pain through the senses. Take a book of Physiology and go over the so-called classes of sensations one by one—the sensations of the mere muscular states; the sensations connected with such vital processes as circulation, alimentation, respiration, and electrical intercommunication with surrounding bodies; the sensations of taste; those of odour; those of touch; those of hearing; and those of sight—and Keats will be found to have been unusually endowed in them all. He had, for example, an extreme sensibility to the pleasures of the palate. The painter Haydon tells a story of his once seeing him cover his tongue with cayenne pepper, in order, as he said, that he might enjoy the delicious sensation of a draught of cold claret after it. "Talking of pleasure," he says himself in one of his letters, "this moment I was writing with one hand, and with the other holding to my mouth a nectarine;" and he goes on to describe the nectarine in language that would re-awaken gustativeness in the oldest fruiterer. This of one of the more ignoble senses, if it is right to call

Digitized by Google

those senses ignoble that minister the least visibly to the intellect. But it was the same with the nobler or more intellectual senses of hearing and sight. He was passionately fond of music; and his sensitiveness to colour, light, and other kinds of visual impression, was preternaturally acute. He possessed, in short, simply in virtue of his organization, a rich intellectual foundation of that kind which consists of notions furnished directly by sensations, and of a corresponding stock of names and terms. Even had he remained without education, his natural vocabulary of words for all the varieties of thrills, tastes, odours, sounds, colours, and tactual perceptions, would have been unusually precise and extensive. As it was, this native capacity for keen and abundant sensation was developed, educated, and harmonised, by the influences of reading, intellectual conversation, and more or less laborious thought, into that richer and more cultivated sensuousness which, under the name of sensibility to natural beauty, is an accepted requisite in the constitution of painters and poets.

It is a fact on which physiologists have recently been dwelling much, that the imagination of any bodily state or action calls into play exactly those nervous, muscular, and other processes, though in weaker degree, which are called into play by the real bodily state or action so simulated. The imagination

Digitized by Google

of sugar in the mouth causes the same exact flow within the lips which would be caused by sugar really tasted; the imagination of firing a rifle does actually compel to the entire gesture of shooting, down even to the bending of the forefinger round the ideal trigger, though the mimic attitude may be baulked of completion; the imagination of a pain in any part may be persevered in till a pain is actually induced in that part. Whether or not this fact shall ever serve much towards the elucidation of the connexion between the imagination and the personal character—whether or not it may ever be developed into a distinct doctrine that the habits of a man's own real being mark, by an *a priori* necessity, the directions in which his imagination will work most naturally and strongly—one can hardly avoid thinking of it in studying the genius of Keats. The most obvious characteristic of Keats's poetry is certainly its abundant *sensuousness*. Some of his finest little poems are all but literally lyrics of the sensuous, embodiments of the feelings of ennui, fatigue, physical languor, and the like, in tissues of fancied circumstance and sensation. Thus, in the well-known *Ode to the Nightingale*—

("My heart aches, and a drowsy numbness pains
My sense, as though of hemlock I had drunk,
Or emptied some dull opiate to the drains
One minute past, and Lethe-wards had sunk.")

Digitized by Google

In this state he hears the nightingale, and straightway finds his cure—

" O for a draught of vintage that hath been
Cool'd a long age in the deep-delvèd earth,
Tasting of Flora and the country-green,
Dance, and Provençal song, and sunburnt mirth!
O for a beaker full of the warm South,
Full of the true, the blushful Hippocrene,
With beaded bubbles winking at the brim
And purple-stainèd mouth,
That I might drink, and leave the world unseen,
And with thee fade away into the forest dim."

It is the same in those longer pieces of narrative phantasy which form the larger portion of his writings. Selecting, as in *Endymion*, a legend of the Grecian mythology, or, as in *Isabella, or the Pot of Basil*, a story from Boccaccio, or, as in *The Eve of St. Agnes*, the hint of a middle-age superstition, or, as in *Lamia*, a story of Greek witchcraft, he sets himself to weave out the little text of substance so given into a linked succession of imaginary movements and incidents taking place in the dim depths of ideal scenery, whether of forest, grotto, sea-shore, the interior of a Gothic castle, or the marble vestibule of a Corinthian palace. In following him in these luxurious excursions into a world of ideal nature and life, we see his imagination winging about, as if it were his disembodied senses hovering insect-like in one humming

Digitized by Google

group, all keeping together in harmony at the bidding of a higher intellectual power, and yet each catering for itself in that species of circumstance which is its peculiar food. Thus, the disembodied sense of Taste—

> "Here is wine
> Alive with sparkles—never, I aver,
> Since Ariadne was a vintager,
> So cool a purple: taste these juicy pears,
> Sent me by sad Vertumnus, when his fears
> Were high about Pomona: here is cream
> Deepening to richness from a snowy gleam—
> Sweeter than that nurse Amalthea skimm'd
> For the boy Jupiter; and here, undimm'd
> By any touch, a bunch of blooming plums
> Ready to melt between an infant's gums."

Or, again, in the description of the dainties in the chapel in the *The Eve of St. Agnes*—

> "And still she slept an azure-lidded sleep
> In blanchèd linen, smooth and lavender'd,
> While he from forth the closet brought a heap
> Of candied apple, quince, and plum, and gourd,
> With jellies soother than the creamy curd,
> And lucent syrups tinct with cinnamon,
> Manna and dates, in argosy transferr'd
> From Fez, and spicèd dainties every one
> From silken Samarcand to cedar'd Lebanon."

As an instance of the disembodied delight in sweet odour, take the lines in *Isabella*—

Digitized by Google

"Then in a silken scarf, sweet with the dews
Of precious flowers pluck'd in Araby,
And divine liquids come with odorous ooze
Through the cold serpent-pipe refreshfully,
She wrapp'd it up."

Delicacy and richness in ideal sensations of touch and sound are found throughout. Thus, even the sensation of cold water on the hands:—

"When in an antechamber every guest
Had felt the cold full sponge to pleasure press'd
By ministering slaves upon his hands and feet";

or the ideal tremulation of a string:—

"Be thou in the van
Of circumstance; yea, seize the arrow's barb
Before the tense string murmur."

But let us pass to the sense of sight, with its various perceptions of colour, light, and lustre. Here Keats is, in some respects, *facile princeps*, even among our most sensuous poets. Here is the description of Lamia while she was still a serpent:—

"She was a gordian shape of dazzling hue,
Vermilion-spotted, golden, green, and blue,
Striped like a zebra, freckled like a pard,
Eyed like a peacock, and all crimson-barr'd,
And full of silver moons that, as she breathed,
Dissolved, or brighter shone, or interwreathed
Their lustres with the gloomier tapestries."

Digitized by Google

Here is a passage somewhat more various, the description of the bower in which Adonis was sleeping—

"Above his head
Four lily-stalks did their white honours wed
To make a coronal; and round him grew
All tendrils green, of every bloom and hue,
Together intertwined and tramell'd fresh:
The vine of glossy sprout; the ivy mesh,
Shading the Ethiop berries; and woodbine,
Of velvet leaves and bugle-blooms divine;
Convolvulus in streakèd vases flush;
The creeper, mellowing for an autumn blush;
And virgin's bower, trailing airily;
With others of the sisterhood."

These last quotations suggest a remark which does not seem unimportant. When critics or poets themselves speak of the love of nature or the perception of natural beauty as essential in the constitution of the poet, it will often be found that what they chiefly mean is an unusual sensibility to the pleasures of one of the senses—the sense of sight. What they mean is chiefly a fine sense of form, colour, lustre, and the like. Now, though it may be admitted that, in so far as ministration of material for the intellect is concerned, sight is the most important of the senses, yet this all but absolute identification of love of nature with sensibility to visual pleasures seems

Digitized by Google

erroneous. It is a kind of treason to the other senses, all of which are avenues of communication between nature and the mind, though sight may be the main avenue. In this respect I believe that one of the most remarkable characteristics of Keats is the universality of his sensuousness.

But farther. Not only, in popular language, does the love of nature seem to be identified with a sensibility to the pleasures of the one sense of sight; but, by a more injurious restriction still, this love of nature or perception of natural beauty seems to have been identified, especially of late, with one class of the pleasures of this one sense of sight—to wit, the pleasures derived from the contemplation of vegetation. Roses, lilies, grass, trees, cornfields, ferns, heaths, and poppies: these are what pass for "nature" with not a few modern poets and critics of poetry. It seems as if, since Wordsworth fulminated the advice to poets to go back to nature and to study nature, it had been the impression of many that the proper way to comply with the advice was to walk out in the fields to some spot where the grass was thick and the weeds and wild-flowers plentiful, and there lie flat upon the turf, chins downwards, peering into grasses and flowers, and inhaling their breath. Now, it ought to be distinctly represented, in correction of this, that ever so minute and loving a study of vegetation,

Digitized by Google

though laudable and delightful in itself, does not amount to a study of nature—that, in fact, vegetation, though a very respectable part of visible nature, is not the whole of it. When night comes, for example, where or how much is your vegetation then? Vegetation is *not* nature: I know no proposition that should be more frequently dinned in the ears of our young poets than this. The peculiar notion of natural beauty involved in the habit spoken of may be said to have come in with the microscope. In the ancient Greek poets we have very little of it. They give us trees and grass and flowers, but they give them more by mere suggestion; and, so far as they introduce physical nature at all (which is chiefly by way of a platform for human action), it is with the larger forms and aspects of nature that they deal, the wide and simple modifications of the great natural elements. Shakespeare, when he chooses, is minutely and lusciously rich in his scenes of vegetation (and, indeed, in comparing modern and romantic with ancient and classical poets generally, it is clear that, in this respect, there has been a gradual development of literary tendency); but no man more signally than Shakespeare keeps the just proportion. Wordsworth himself, when he called out for the study of nature, and set the example in his own case by retiring to the Lakes, did not commit the error of confounding nature

Digitized by Google

with vegetation. In that district, indeed, where there are mountains and tarns, incessant cloud-variations, and other forms of nature on the great scale, to employ the eye, it was not likely that it would disproportionately exercise itself on particular banks and gardens or individual herbs and flowers. Such an affection for the minutiæ of vegetation was reserved perhaps for the so-called Cockney poets; and one can see that, if it were once supposed that they introduced the taste, the fact might be humorously explained by recollecting that nature to most of them was nature as seen from Hampstead Heath.

Now, undoubtedly, Keats is great in botanical circumstance. Here is a passage in which he describes the kind of home he would like to live in for the purpose of writing poetry:—

"Ah! surely it must be where'er I find
Some flowery spot, sequester'd, wild, romantic,
That often must have seen a poet frantic;
Where oaks that erst the Druid knew are growing,
And flowers, the glory of one day, are blowing;
Where the dark-leaved laburnum's drooping clusters
Reflect athwart the stream their yellow lustres,
And, intertwined, the cassia's arms unite
With its own drooping buds, but very white;
Where on one side are covert branches hung,
'Mong which the nightingales have always sung
In leafy quiet; where to pry aloof
Between the pillars of the sylvan roof

Digitized by Google

Would be to find where violet buds are nestling,
And where the bee with cowslip bells was wrestling:
There must be too a ruin dark and gloomy,
To say 'Joy not too much in all that's bloomy.'"

Again, in the hymn to Pan in *Endymion*:—

"O thou whose mighty palace-roof doth hang
From jagged trunks, and overshadoweth
Eternal whispers, glooms, the birth, life, death
Of unseen flowers in heavy peacefulness;
Who lovest to see the Hamadryads dress
Their ruffled locks where meeting hazels darken,
And through whole solemn hours dost sit and hearken
The dreary melody of bedded reeds
In desolate places where dank moisture breeds
The pipy hemlock to strange overgrowth,
Bethinking thee how melancholy loth
Thou wast to leave fair Syrinx—do thou now,
By thy love's milky brow!
By all the trembling mazes that she ran!
Hear us, great Pan!"

But, though Keats did "joy in all that is bloomy," I do not know that he joyed "too much." Though luscious vegetation was one of his delights, I do not think that in him there is such a disproportion between this and other kinds of imagery as there has been in other and inferior poets. There are sea and cloud in his poetry, as well as herbage and turf; he is as rich in mineralogical and zoological circumstance

Digitized by Google

as in that of botany. His most obvious characteristic, I repeat, is the universality of his sensuousness. And this it is, added to his exquisite mastery in language and verse, that makes it such a luxury to read him. In reading Shelley, even when we admire him most, there is always a sense of pain; the influence of Keats is uniformly soothing. In part, as I have said, this arises from his exquisite mastery in language and verse—which, in itself, is one form or result of his sensuousness. There is hardly any recent poet in connexion with whom the mechanism of verse in relation to thought may be studied more delightfully. Occasionally, it is true, there is the shock of a horrible Cockney rhyme. Thus:—

> "I shall again see Phœbus in the morning,
> Or flushed Aurora in the roseate dawning."

Or worse still:—

> "Couldst thou wish for lineage higher
> Than twin-sister of Thalia?"

Throughout, too, there are ungainly traces of the dependence of the matter upon the rhyme. But where, on the whole, shall we find language softer and richer, verse more harmonious and sweetly-linked, and, though usually after the model of some older poet, more thoroughly novel and original; or where

Digitized by Google

shall we see more beautifully exemplified the power of that high artifice of rhyme by which, as by little coloured lamps of light thrown out in advance of the prow of their thoughts from moment to moment, poets steer their way so windingly through the fantastic gloom?

In virtue of that unusual and universal sensuousness which all must discern in Keats (and which, as being perhaps his most distinctive characteristic, I have chosen chiefly to illustrate in the quotations I have made), he would certainly have been very memorable among English poets, even had there been less in him than there was of that power of reflective and constructive intellect by which alone so abundant a wealth of the sensuous could have been ruled and shaped into artistic forms. The earlier poems of Shakespeare were, in the main, tissues of sensuous phantasy; and I believe that, compared even with these, the poems that Keats has left us would not seem inferior, if the comparison could be impartially made. The same might be said of certain portions of Spenser's poetry, the resemblance of which to much of Keats's would strike any reader acquainted with both poets, even if he did not know that Keats was a student of Spenser. Perhaps the likest poet to Keats in the whole list of preceding English poets is William Browne, the author of "Britannia's Pastorals;" but,

Digitized by Google

rich and pleasant as the poetry of Browne is, beyond much that capricious chance has preserved in greater repute, that of Keats is, in Browne's own qualities of richness and pleasantness, immeasurably superior.

Neither sensuousness alone, however, nor sensuousness governed by a reflective and fanciful intellect, will constitute a great poet. However highly endowed a youthful poet may be in these, his only chance of real greatness is in passing on, by due transition and gradation, to that more matured state of mind in which, though the sensuous may remain and the cool fancy may weave its tissues as before, human interest and sympathy with the human heart and grand human action shall predominate in all. Now, in the case of Keats, there is evidence of the fact of this gradation. There is evidence of a progress both intellectually and morally; of a disposition, already consciously known to himself, to move forward out of the sensuous or merely sensuous-ideal mood, into the mood of the truly epic poet, the poet of life, sublimity and action. Thus, in one of his prose letters, he says, "Although I take Poetry to be the chief, yet there is something else wanting to one who passes his life among books and thoughts of books." And again, "I find earlier days are gone by; I find that I can have no enjoyment in the world but continual drinking of knowledge. I find there is no worthy pursuit but the idea

Digitized by Google

of doing some good to the world. Some do it with their society; some with their art; some with their benevolence; some with a sort of power of conferring pleasure and good humour on all they meet—and, in a thousand ways, all dutiful to the command of nature. There is but one way for me. The road lies through application, study and thought. I will pursue it. I have been hovering for some time between an exquisite sense of the luxurious and a love for philosophy. Were I calculated for the former, I should be glad; but, as I am not, I shall turn all my soul to the latter." In his poetry we have similar evidence. Even in his earlier poems one is struck not only by the steady presence of a keen and subtle intellect, but also by frequent flashes of permanently deep meaning, frequent lines of lyric thoughtfulness, and occasional maxims of weighty historic generality. What we have quoted for our special purpose would fail utterly to convey the proper impression of the merits of Keats in these respects, or indeed of his poetic genius generally, unless the memory of the reader were to suggest the necessary supplement. From *Endymion* itself, sensuous to very wildness as the poem is considered, scores of passages might be quoted to prove that already, while it was being written, intellect, feeling, and experience were doing their work with Keats—that, to use his own figure, he had

Digitized by Google

then already advanced for some time out of the Infant Chamber, or Chamber of mere Sensation, into the Chamber of Maiden Thought, and had even there begun to distinguish the openings of the dark passages beyond and around, and to be seized with the longing to explore them. Seeing this, looking then at such of his later poems as *Lamia* and *The Eve of St. Agnes*, and contemplating last of all that wonderful fragment of *Hyperion* which he hurled into the world as he was leaving it, and of which Byron but expressed the common opinion when he said "It seems actually inspired by the Titans, and is as sublime as Æschylus," we can hardly be wrong in believing that, had Keats lived to the ordinary age of man, he would have been one of the greatest of all our poets. As it is, though he died at the age of twenty-five, and left only what in all does not amount to much more than a day's leisurely reading, I believe we shall all be disposed to place him very near indeed to our very best.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

V.

THEORIES OF POETRY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

V.

THEORIES OF POETRY.[1]

THERE have been hundreds of disquisitions on poetry in all ages, long and short, good, bad, and indifferent; and, now-a-days, we cannot open a magazine or a review without finding something new said about our friend "*The* Poet," as distinguished from our other friend "*The* Prophet" and the rest. But cant cannot be helped; and, if we are to abandon good phrases because they have been used a great many times, there is an end to all reviewing.

Much, however, as has been spoken about poetry and poets, it may be doubted whether the world, in its meditations on this subject, has got far beyond the antithesis suggested by what Aristotle said about it two thousand years ago, on the one hand, and what Bacon advanced two hundred and fifty years ago, on

[1] *North British Review*, August 1853.—"Poetics: an Essay on Poetry." By E. S. Dallas. London, 1852.

Digitized by Google

the other. At least, acquainted as we are with a good deal that Wordsworth, and Coleridge, and Goethe, and Leigh Hunt, and now Mr. Dallas, have written about poetry by way of more subtle and insinuating investigation, we still feel that the best notion of the thing, for any manageable purpose, is to be beaten out of the rough-hewn definitions of it, from opposite sides, supplied by Aristotle and Bacon. In his *Poetics*, Aristotle writes as follows:—

"Epic poetry and the poetry of tragedy, as well as comedy and dithyrambic poetry, and most flute and lyre music, all are, in their nature, viewed generally, *imitations* (μιμήσεις); differing from each other, however, in three things—either in that they imitate by different means, or in that they imitate different things, or in that they imitate differently and not in the same manner. For, as some artists, either from technical training or from mere habit, imitate various objects by colours and forms, and other artists by vocal sound, so, of the arts mentioned above, all effect their imitation by rhythm, and words, and melody, employed either severally or in combination. For example, in flute and lyre music, and in any other kind of music having similar effect, such as pipe music, melody and rhythm are alone used. In the dance, again, the imitation is accomplished by rhythm by itself, without melody; there being dancers who, by means of rhythmical gesticulations, imitate even manners, passions, and acts. Lastly, epic poetry produces its imitations either by mere articulate words, or by metre superadded. . . .

Digitized by Google

Since, in the second place, those who imitate copy living characters, it behoves imitations either to be of serious and lofty, or of mean and trivial objects. The imitation must, in fact, either be of characters and actions better than they are found among ourselves, or worse, or much the same; just as, among painters, Polygnotus represented people better-looking than they were, Pauson worse-looking, and Dionysius exactly as they were. Now, it is evident that each of the arts above mentioned will have these differences, the difference arising from their imitating different things. In the dance, and in flute and lyre music, these diversities are visible; as also in word-imitations and simple metre. Homer, for example, really made men better than they are; Cleophon made them such as they are; whereas Hegemon, the first writer of parodies, and Nicochares, made them worse. So also, in dithyrambics and lyrics, one might, with Timotheus and Philoxenus, imitate even Persians and Cyclopes. By this very difference, too, is tragedy distinguished from comedy. The one even now strives in its imitations to exhibit men better than they are, the other worse. . . . Still the third difference remains: namely, as to the manner or form of the imitation. For, even though the means of imitation, and the things imitated, should be the same, there might be this difference, that the imitation might be made either in the form of a narration (and that either through an alien narrator, as Homer does, or in one's own person without changing) or by representing the imitators as all active and taking part. So that, though in one respect Homer and Sophocles would go together as imitators, as both having earnest subjects, in another Sophocles and Aristophanes would

Digitized by Google

go together, as both imitating dramatically. . . . Two causes, both of them natural, seem to have operated together to originate the poetic art. The first is that the tendency to imitate is innate in men from childhood (the difference between man and other animals being that he is the most imitative of all, acquiring even his first lessons in knowledge through imitation) and that all take pleasure in imitation. . . . . In the second place, just as the tendency to imitate is natural to us, so also is the love of melody and of rhythm; and metre is evidently a variety of rhythm. Those, therefore, who from the first were most strongly inclined to these things by nature, proceeding by little and little, originated poetry out of their impromptu fancies. Poetry, thus originated, was broken into departments corresponding to the peculiar characters of its producers, the more serious imitating only beautiful actions and their issues, while the more thoughtless natures imitated mean incidents, inventing lampoons, as others had invented hymns and eulogies. Before Homer we have no poem of this kind to be mentioned, though doubtless many existed."

Such, as indicated in those sentences of the treatise which seem to be of most essential import, is the general doctrine of Aristotle as to the nature of Poetry. With this contrast Bacon's theory, as stated, cursorily but profoundly, in the following sentences from the *Advancement of Learning*:—

"The parts of Human Learning have reference to the three parts of man's understanding, which is the seat

Digitized by Google

of learning—History to his Memory; Poesy to his Imagination; and Philosophy to his Reason. . . . Poesy is a part of learning, in measure of words for the most part restrained, but in all other points extremely licensed, and doth truly refer to the imagination; which, being not tied to the laws of matter, may at pleasure join that which Nature hath severed, and sever that which Nature hath joined, and so make unlawful matches and divorces of things. *Pictoribus atque Poetis*, &c. (It [Poetry] is taken in two senses—in respect of words, or matter. In the first sense, it is but a character of style, and belongeth to the arts of speech,) and is not pertinent for the present; in the latter, it is, as hath been said, one of the principal portions of learning, and is nothing else but Feigned History, which may be styled as well in prose as in verse. The use of this Feigned History hath been to give some shadow of satisfaction to the mind of man in the points wherein the nature of things doth deny it—the world being in proportion inferior to the soul; by reason whereof there is agreeable to the spirit of man a more ample greatness, a more exact goodness, and a more absolute variety than can be found in the nature of things. Therefore, because the acts or events of true history have not that magnitude which satisfieth the mind of man, Poesy feigneth acts and events greater and more heroical; because true history propoundeth the successes and the issues of actions not so agreeable to the merits of virtue and vice, therefore Poesy feigneth them more just in retribution, and more according to revealed Providence; because true history representeth actions and events more ordinary and less interchanged, therefore Poesy endueth them

Digitized by Google

with more rareness: so as it appeareth that Poesy serveth and conferreth to magnanimity, morality, and delectation. And, therefore, it was ever thought to have some participation of divineness, because it doth raise and erect the mind, by submitting the shows of things to the desires of the mind, whereas Reason doth buckle and bow the mind unto the nature of things. . . . In this third part of learning, which is Poesy, I can report no deficience. For, being as a plant that cometh of the lust of the earth without a formal seed, it hath sprung up and spread abroad more than any other kind."

Now, though it would be possible so to stretch and comment upon Aristotle's theory of poetry as to make it correspond with Bacon's, yet, *primâ facie*, the two theories are different, and even antithetical. If both are true, it is because the theorists tilt at opposite sides of the shield. Aristotle makes the essence of Poetry to consist in its being imitative and truthful; Bacon, in its being creative and fantastical. According to Aristotle, there is a natural tendency in men to the imitation of what they see in nature; the various arts are nothing more than imitations, so to speak, with different kinds of imitating substance; and poetry is that art which imitates in articulate language, or, at most, in language elevated and rendered more rich and exquisite by the addition of metre. According to Bacon, on the other hand, there is a natural tendency, and

Digitized by Google

a natural prerogative, in the mind of man to condition the universe anew for its own intellectual satisfaction. It may brood over the sea of actual existences, carrying on the work of creation, with these existences for the material, and its own phantasies and longings for the informing spirit; it may be ever on the wing among nature's sounds and appearances, not merely for the purpose of observing and co-ordinating them, but also that it may delight itself with new ideal combinations, severing what nature has joined, and joining what nature has put asunder. Poetry, in accordance with this view, might perhaps be defined as the art of producing, by means of articulate language, metrical or unmetrical, a *fictitious concrete*, either like to something existing in nature, or, if unlike anything there existing, justifying that unlikeness by the charm of its own impressiveness.

Amid all the discussions of all the critics as to the nature of poetry, this antagonism, if such it is, between the Aristotelian and the Baconian theories, will be found eternally reproducing itself.

When Wordsworth defined poetry to be "emotion recollected in tranquillity," and declared it to be the business of the poet to represent out of real life, and as nearly as possible in the language of real life, scenes and events of an affecting or exciting character, he reverted, and with good effect, to the imitation-theory

Digitized by Google

of Aristotle. All Coleridge's disquisitions, on the other hand, even when his friend Wordsworth is the theme and exemplar, are subtle developments of the imagination-theory of Bacon. His famous remark that the true antithesis is not Poetry and Prose, but Poetry and Science, is but another form of Bacon's remark, that, whereas it is the part of Reason "to buckle and bow the mind to the nature of things," it is the part of Imagination, as the poetical faculty, "to raise the mind by submitting the shows of things to its desires." And so with the definitions, more or less formal, of other writers. Thus Leigh Hunt: "Poetry is the utterance of a passion for truth, beauty, and power, embodying and illustrating its conceptions by imagination and fancy, and modulating its language on the principle of variety in uniformity." That this definition, notwithstanding that it is constructed on the principle of omitting nothing that any one would like to see included, is yet essentially a glimpse from the Baconian side of the shield, is obvious from the fact that its author afterwards uses as synonymous with it the abbreviations "Imaginative passion," "Passion for imaginative pleasure." Lastly, Mr. Dallas, with all his ingenuity, does not really get much farther in the end. Beginning with an expression of dissatisfaction with all existing definitions of poetry, Aristotle's and Bacon's included, as being definitions of the thing not in itself,

Digitized by Google

but in its accidents, he proceeds first, very properly, to make a distinction between poetical feeling, which all men have, and the art of poetical expression, which is the prerogative of those who are called poets. Both are usually included under the term Poetry; but, to avoid confusion, Mr. Dallas proposes to use the general term Poetry for the poetical feeling, and to call the art which caters for that feeling Poesy. Then, taking for his guide the fact that all have agreed that, whatever poetry is, it has *pleasure* for its end, he seeks to work his way to the required definition through a prior analysis of the nature of pleasure. Having, as the result of this analysis, defined pleasure to be "the harmonious and unconscious activity of the soul," he finds his way then clear. For there are various kinds of pleasure, and poetry is one of these. It is "imaginative pleasure;" or, if we write the thing more fully out, it is the "imaginative harmonious and unconscious activity of the soul," or that kind of harmonious and unconscious activity of the soul which consists in the exercise of the imagination. Poesy, of course, is the corresponding art, the art of producing what will give imaginative pleasure. Now, with all our respect for the ability with which Mr. Dallas conducts his investigation, and our relish for the many lucid and deep remarks which drop from his pen in the course of it, we must say that, as respects the main matter

Digitized by Google

in discussion, his investigation does not leave us fully satisfied. "Poetry is imaginative pleasure": very well; but Bacon had said substantially the same thing when he described poetry as a kind of literature having reference to the imagination; and Leigh Hunt had, as we have seen, anticipated the exact phrase, defining poetry to be "imaginative passion," and the faculty of the poet to be the faculty of "producing imaginative pleasure." In short, the whole difficulty, the very essence of the question, consists not in the word *pleasure*, but in the word *imaginative*. Had Mr. Dallas bestowed half the pains on the illustration of what is meant by imagination that he has bestowed on the analysis of what is meant by pleasure, he would have done the science of poetry more service. This—the nature of the imaginative faculty—is "the vaporous drop profound that hangs upon the corner of the moon," and Mr. Dallas has not endeavoured to catch it. His chapter upon the Law of Imagination is one of the most cursory in the book; and the total result, as far as a fit definition of poetry is concerned, is that he ends in finding himself in the same hut with Bacon, after having refused its shelter.

The antagonism between the Aristotelian theory, which makes poetry to consist in imitative passion, and the Baconian theory, which makes it to consist in imaginative passion, is curiously reproducing itself at

Digitized by Google

present [1853] in the kindred art of painting. Pre-Raphaelitism is in painting very much what the reform led by Wordsworth was in poetical literature. Imitate nature; reproduce her exact and literal forms; do not paint ideal trees or vague recollections of trees, ideal brick-walls or vague recollections of brick-walls, but actual trees and actual brick-walls; dismiss from your minds the trash of Sir Joshua Reynolds about "correcting nature," "improving nature," and the like;—such are the maxims addressed by the Pre-Raphaelites, both with brush and with pen, to their fellow-artists. All this is, we say, a return to the theory of Aristotle, which makes the essence of art to consist in Imitation, and a protest against that of Bacon, which makes the essence of art to consist in Idealization. Poor Sir Joshua Reynolds ought to fall back upon Bacon, so that, when he is next attacked for his phrases "improving nature" and the like, the Pre-Raphaelites may see looming behind him the more formidable figure of a man whose words no one dares to call trash, and whose very definition of art was couched in expressions like these: "There is, agreeable to the spirit of man, a more ample greatness, a more exact goodness, and a more absolute variety than can be found in the nature of things" "The use of feigned history is to give to the mind of man some shadow of satisfaction in those points wherein the

Digitized by Google

nature of things doth deny it." The battle, we say, must be fought with these phrases. Nor is the battle confined to the art of painting. There is a more restricted kind of Pre-Raphaelitism now making its way in the department of fictitious literature. Admiring the reality, the truthfulness, of Thackeray's delineations of life and society, there are men who will have nothing to do with what they call the phantasies and caricatures of the Dickens school. The business of the novelist, they say, is to represent men as they are, with all their foibles as well as their virtues; in other words, to imitate real life. Here again comes in the Baconian thunder. "Because the acts or events of true history have not that magnitude which satisfieth the mind of man, poesy (and Bacon's definition of poesy includes prose fiction) feigneth acts and events greater and more heroical." Whether Dickens can take the benefit of this authority, in those cases where he is charged with unreality, we need not inquire; it evidently points, however, to a *possible* style of prose fiction different from that of Fielding and Thackeray, and yet as legitimate in the view of art.

For ourselves, we hold the imitation-theory as applied to poetry or art to be so inadequate in essential respects that it would be time lost to try to mend it; and we find no suitable statement of

Digitized by Google

what seems to be the very idea of poetry, except in some definition like that of Bacon.

Only consider the matter for a moment. Take any piece of verse from any poet, and in what single respect can that piece of verse be said to be an imitation of nature? In the first place, that it is verse at all is a huge deviation in itself from what is, in any ordinary sense, natural. Men do not talk in good literary prose, much less in blank verse or rhyme. Macbeth, in his utmost strait and horror—Lear, when the lightnings scathed his white head—did not actually talk in metre. Even Bruce at Bannockburn did not address his army in trochees. Here, then, at the very outset, there is a break-down in the theory of Imitation, or literal truth to nature. And all prose literature shares in this break-down. Not a single personage in Scott's novels would have spoken precisely as Scott makes them speak; nay, nor is there a single character in Thackeray himself strictly and in every respect a fac-simile of what is real. Correct grammar, sentences of varied lengths and of various cadences, much more octosyllabic or pentameter verse, and still more rhymed stanzas, are all artificialities. Literature has them, but in real life they are not to be found. It is as truly a deviation from nature to represent a king talking in blank verse, or a lover plaining in rhyme, as it is, in an opera, to make a martyr sing a song and be encored

Digitized by Google

before being thrown into the flames. So far as truth to nature is concerned, an opera, or even a ballet, is hardly more artificial than a drama. Suppose, however, that, in order to escape from this difficulty, it should be said that metre, rhyme, rhetorical consecutiveness, and the like, are conditions previously and for other reasons existing in the material in which the imitation is to take place: would the theory of imitation or truth to nature even then hold good? Let it be granted that grammatical and rhythmical prose is a kind of marble, that blank verse is a kind of jasper, and that rhymed verse is a kind of amethyst or opaline; that the selection of those substances as the materials in which the imitation is to be effected is a thing already and independently determined on; and that it is only in so far as imitation can be achieved consistently with the nature of those substances that imitation and art are held to be synonymous. Will the theory even then look the facts in the face? It will not. In the time of Aristotle, indeed, when most Greek poetry was, to a greater degree than poetry is now, either directly descriptive or directly narrative, the theory might have seemed less astray than it must to us. Even then, however, it was necessarily at fault. The Achilles and the Ajax of Homer, the Œdipus and the Antigone of Sophocles, were, in no sense, imitations from nature; they were ideal beings, never seen on

Digitized by Google

any Ægæan coast, and dwelling nowhere save in the halls of imagination. Aristotle himself felt this; and hence, at the risk of cracking into pieces his own fundamental theory, he indulges occasionally in a strain like that of Bacon when he maintains that poetry "representeth actions and events less ordinary and interchanged, and endueth them with more rareness," than is found in nature. "The poet's business," says Aristotle, "is not to tell events as they have actually happened, but as they possibly might happen." And again: "Poetry is more philosophical and more sublime than history." Very true: but what then becomes of the imitation? In what possible sense can there be imitation unless there is something to be imitated? If that something is ideal, if it exists not actually and outwardly, but only in the mind of the artist, then imitation is the wrong word to use.

All this will be much more obvious if we refer to modern poetry. Here is a stanza from Spenser—part of his description of the access to Mammon's cave He has just described Revenge, Jealousy, Fear, Shame and other entities.

"And over them sad Horror with grim hue
Did always soar, beating his iron wings;
And after him owls and night-ravens flew,
The hateful messengers of heavy things,
Of death and dolour telling sad tidings

Digitized by Google

While sad Celeno, sitting on a clift,
A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings,
That heart of flint asunder could have rift;
Which having ended, after him she flieth swift."

This is true poetry; and yet, by no possible ingenuity, short of that which identified King Jeremiah with pickled cucumbers, could it be shown to consist of imitation. If it be said that it is mimic creation, and that this is the sense in which Aristotle meant his imitation, or μίμησις, to be understood, we shall be very glad to accept the explanation; but then we shall have to reply that, as the essence of the business lies in the word "creation" as the substantive of the phrase, it is a pity the brunt of the disquisition should have been borne so long by the adjective. Aristotle, we believe, did mean that poetry was, in the main, fiction, or invention of fables in imitation of nature; but, unfortunately, even then he misleads by making imitation, which is but the jackal in the treatise, seem the lion in the definition. Nor even then will his theory be faultless and complete. Spenser's grim-hued Horror, soaring aloft, beating his iron wings, and with owls and night-ravens after him, is certainly a creation; but in what sense it is a *mimic* creation, or a creation in imitation of nature, it would take a critic, lost to all reasonable use of words, to show.

In short, and to close this discussion with a phrase

Digitized by Google

which seems to us to fall like a block of stone through all our reasonings about art imitating nature, being true to nature, and the like, "Art is *called* art," said Goethe, "simply because it is *not* nature." This, it will be seen, is identical with Bacon's poesy "submitting the shows of things to the desires of the mind." Only in one sense can it be said that the art itself comes under the denomination of nature. Thus, Shakespeare—

> "E'en that art,
> Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art
> That nature makes."

True, as Goethe would have been the first to admit! In this sense, Spenser's grim-hued Horror beating his iron wings *was* a part of nature, because, in this sense, the poet's own soul, with that very imagination starting out of it, was involved and contained in the universal round. But in any sense in which the words art and nature are available for the purposes of critical exposition, Goethe's saying is irrefragable: "Art is *called* art simply because it is *not* nature." Dissolve the poet through nature, regard the creative act itself as a part of nature, and then, of course, poetry or art is truth to nature. But keep them distinct, as you must do if you talk of imitation, and then the poet is nature's master, changer, tyrant, lover, watcher, slave, and mimic, all in one, his head now low

Digitized by Google

in her lap and again, a moment after, she scared and weeping because, though he is with her, he minds her not.

All this, we believe, it is very necessary to say. Pre-Raphaelitism in painting, like Wordsworth's reform in poetical literature (which reform consisted in the precept and example of what may be called Pre-Drydenism), we regard, so far as it is a recall of art to truth and observation, as an unmixed good. But it is essentially, in this particular respect, a reform only in the *language* of art; and art itself is not language, but the creative use of it. We believe the Pre-Raphaelites know this; for, though, in theorizing, they naturally put forward their favourite idea of imitation or truthfulness, yet in their practice they are as much imaginative artists as imitative. While in any of the higher Pre-Raphaelite paintings the *language* of the painting—that is, the flowers, grasses, foliage, brick-walls, and costumes—may be more real and true to fact than elsewhere, yet the *thought* which this language is used to convey is as ideal, as much a supposition, imagination, or recombination, as much a mere wish or *utinam*, as in the majority of other pictures. Still, in our theory of art at the present day, or at least in our theory of literary art, the notion of imitation is beginning to exist in excess. The very power of that most admirable novelist, Thackeray, is beginning to spoil us.

Digitized by Google

We will have nothing but reality, nothing but true renderings of men and women as they are; no giants or demigods any more, but persons of ordinary stature, and the black and the white in character so mixed that people shall neither seem crows nor white doves, but all more or less magpies. (Good, certainly, all this; but, had the rule always been peremptory, where had been our Achilleses, our Prometheuses, our Tancreds, our Lears, our Hamlets, our Fausts, our Egmonts; these men that never were, these idealizations of what might be—not copied from nature, but imagined and full-fashioned by the soul of man, and thence disenchained into nature, magnificent phantasms, to roam amid its vacancies? /Nor will it do to exempt the epic and the tragic muses, and to subject to the rule only the muse of prose fiction. Where, in that case, had been our Quixotes, our Pantagruels and Panurges, our Ivanhoes and Rebeccas, our Fixleins and Siebenkaeses? (These were sublimations of nature, not imitations; suggestions to history by genius and an inspired philosophy. /The muse of prose literature is very hardly dealt with. Why in prose may there not be much of that license in the fantastic, that measured riot, that right of whimsy, that unabashed dalliance with the extreme and beautiful, which the world allows by prescription to verse? Why may not prose chase forest-nymphs, and see little green-eyed elves, and delight in

Digitized by Google

peonies and musk-roses, and invoke the stars, and roll mists about the hills, and watch the seas thundering through caverns and dashing against promontories? Why, in prose, quail from the grand or ghastly on the one hand, or blush with shame at too much of the exquisite on the other? Is prose made of iron? Must it never weep, never laugh, never linger to look at a buttercup, never ride at a gallop over the downs? Always at a steady trot, transacting only such business as may be done within the limits of a soft sigh on the one hand and a thin smile on the other, must it leave all finer and higher work of imagination to the care of Verse? Partly so, perhaps; for prose soon becomes ashamed, and, when highly inspired, lifts itself into metre. Yet it is well for literature that there should be among us such prose-poets as Richter was to the Germans: men avoiding nothing as too fantastic for their element, but free and daring in it as the verse-poet in his. All honour to Thackeray and the prose-fiction of social reality; but let us not so theorize as to exclude from prose-fiction the boundless imagination of another Richter, or even the lawless zanyism of another Rabelais.

Poetry, then, we must, after all, define in terms tantamount to those of Bacon. With Bacon himself we may define it vaguely as having reference to the

Digitized by Google

imagination, "which faculty submitteth the shows of things to the desires of the mind, whereas reason doth buckle and bow the mind unto the nature of things." Or we may vary the phrase, and, with Coleridge, call it "the vision and faculty divine;" or, with Leigh Hunt, "imaginative passion," the passion for "imaginative pleasure;" or, with Mr. Dallas, more analytically, "the imaginative, harmonious, and unconscious activity of the soul." In any case, IMAGINATION is the main word, the main idea. Upon this Shakespeare himself has put his seal:

> "The lunatic, the lover, and the poet,
> Are of *imagination* all compact."

In short, poesy is what the Greek language recognised it to be—*ποίησις*, or creation. The antithesis, therefore, *is* between Poetry and Science—*ποίησις* and *νόησις*. Let the universe of all accumulated existence, inner and outer, material and mental, up to the present moment, lie under one like a sea, and there are two ways in which it may be intellectually dealt with and brooded over. On the one hand, the intellect of man may brood over it inquiringly, striving to penetrate it through and through, to understand the system of laws by which its multitudinous atoms are held together, to master the mystery of its pulsations and sequences. This is the mood of the man of science. On the other hand, the man of intellect may

Digitized by Google

brood over it creatively, careless how it is held together, or whether it is held together at all, and regarding it only as material to be submitted farther to the operation of a combining energy, and lashed and beaten up into new existences. This is the mood of the poet. The poet is emphatically the man who continues the work of creation; who forms, fashions, combines, imagines; who breathes his own spirit into things; who conditions the universe anew according to his whim and pleasure; who bestows heads of brass on men when he likes, and sees beautiful women with arms of azure; who walks amid Nature's appearances, divorcing them, rematching them, interweaving them, starting at every step flocks of white-winged phantasies that fly and flutter into the ether of the future.

All very well; but, in plain English, what is meant by this imagination, this creative faculty, which is allowed by all to be the characteristic of the poet? Mr. Dallas tells us that psychologists differ in their definitions of imagination. Dugald Stewart, and others, he says, have regarded it solely as the faculty which looks to the possible and unknown, which invents hippogriffs and the like ideal beasts—in short, the creative faculty proper. Mr. Dallas maintains that this is not sufficient, and that the faculty unphilosophically called Conception, the faculty which mirrors or reproduces the

Digitized by Google

real, must also be included in the poetic imagination. And this is nearly all that he says on the subject.

Now, if we were to venture on a closer definition, such as might be found applicable over the whole domain of poetry, we should perhaps affirm something to the following effect:—The poetic or imaginative faculty is *the power of intellectually producing a new or artificial concrete;* and the poetic genius or temperament is *that disposition of mind which leads habitually, or by preference, to this kind of intellectual exercise.*

There is much in this statement that might need explanation. In the first place, we would call attention to the words "intellectually producing," "intellectual exercise." These words are not needlessly inserted. It seems to us that the distinct recognition of what is implied in them would save a great deal of confusion. The phrases "poetic fire," "poetic passion," and the like, true and useful as they are on proper occasion, are calculated sometimes to mislead. There may be fire, there may be passion in the poet; but that which is peculiar to the poet, that which constitutes the poetic tendency as such, is a special *intellectual* habit, distinct from the intellectual habit of the man of science. The poetic process may be set in operation by, and accompanied by, any amount of passion or feeling; but the poetic process itself, so far as distinctions are of any value, is an *intellectual* process. Farther, as to its

Digitized by Google

kind, it is the intellectual process of producing a new or artificial concrete. This distinguishes poetry at once, in all its varieties, and whether in verse or in prose, from the other forms of literature. In scientific or expository literature the tendency is to the abstract, to the translation of the facts and appearances of nature into general intellectual conceptions and forms of language. In oratorical literature, or the literature of moral stimulation, the aim is to urge the mind in a certain direction, or to induce upon it a certain state. There remains, distinct from either of these, the literature of the concrete, the aim of which is to represent the facts and appearances of nature and life, or to form out of them new concrete combinations. There are men who delight in things simply because they have happened, or because they can imagine them to happen: men, for example, to whom it is a real pleasure to know that at such and such a time a knight in armour rode along that way and across that bridge; who dwell with relish on such a fact as that Sulla had a face mottled white and red, so that an Athenian wit compared it to a mulberry dipped in meal; who can go back to that moment, and re-arrest time there, as in a picture, when Manlius hung half-way from the top of the Tarpeian rock, and had his death of blood yet beneath him, or when Marie Antoinette lay under the axe and it had not fallen; to whom also the mere em-

Digitized by Google

bodiments of their own fancy or of the fancy of others are visions they never tire to gaze on. These are the votaries of the concrete. Now, so far as that literature of the concrete whose business it is to gratify such feelings deals merely with the actual facts of the past as delivered to it by memory, it resolves itself into the department of *History;* but, so far as it remains unexhausted by such a subduction, it is *Poetry* or *Creative Literature.* In practice, as we all know, the two shade into each other, the historian often requiring and displaying the imagination of the poet, and the poet, on the other hand, often relapsing into the describer and the historian. And here a part of our definition may be found fault with. Inasmuch as the poet does not necessarily, in every case, invent scenes and incidents totally ideal, but often treats poetically the actual fields and landscapes of the earth and the real incidents of life—so that, in fact, much of our best and most genuine poetry is descriptive and historical—why define poesy to be the production of a new or artificial concrete? Why not call it either the reproduction of an old or the production of a new concrete? The objection is that the division which would be thus established is not fundamental. In every piece of poetry, even the most descriptive and historical, that which makes it poetical is not the concrete as furnished by sheer recollection, but the concrete as shaped and bodied forth

Digitized by Google

anew by the poet's thought—that is, as factitious and artificial. Shelley, indeed, very sweetly calls poetry "the record of the best and happiest moments of the best and happiest minds;" but then this only refers us farther back in time for the poetry, which certainly does not consist in the act of recording, if it *be* only recording, but already lay in the good and happy moments that are recorded. Thus, if it be said that the beautiful passage in Wordsworth describing a winter landscape, with the lake on which he skated with his companions in his boyhood, is a mere transcript of a scene from recollection, it may be replied that, if this is the case (which we do not admit), then the poetry of the passage was transacted along with the skating, and the critic, instead of watching the man at his writing-table, must keep by the side of the boy on the ice. In short, in every case whatever, poetry is the production of an artificial concrete—artificial either in *toto*, or in so far as it is matter of sense or memory worked into form by the infusion of a meaning. The word "artificial" has bad associations connected with it; but, as Hazlitt said of Allegory, it is really a harmless word, and "won't bite you." It is only necessary to see what it means here to like it well enough.

The poetical tendency, then, is the tendency to that kind of mental activity which consists in the production (one might almost say secretion) by the mind of

Digitized by Google

an artificial concrete; and the poetic genius is that kind or condition of mind to which this kind of activity is constitutionally most delightful and easy. Of the legitimacy of such a mode of activity what need to say anything? With some theorists, indeed, poets are little better than privileged liars, and poetry is little better than the art of lying so as to give pleasure. Even Bacon, with his synonyms of "feigned history" and the like, evidently means to insinuate a kind of contempt for poetry as compared with philosophy. The one he calls "the theatre," where it is not good to stay long; the other is the "judicial place or palace of the mind." This is natural enough in a man the tenor of whose own intellectual work must have inclined him, apart even from the original constitutional bias which determined *that*, to prefer the exercise which "buckled and bowed the mind to the nature of things" to the exercise which "elevates the mind by submitting the shows of things to its desires." But recognising, as he did, that the one exercise is, equally with the other, the exercise of a faculty which is part and parcel of the human constitution, he was not the man to go very far with the joke about poets being a species of liars. That, we believe, was Bentham's fun. One can see what a good thing might be made of it. "Why was that poor fellow transported? Why, the fact is, at last assizes,

Digitized by Google

he originated a piece of new concrete, which the law calls perjury." But the joke may be taken by the other end. When that deity of the Grecian mythology (if the Grecian mythology had such a deity) whose function it was to create trees, walked one sultry day over the yet treeless earth, and when, chancing to lie down in a green spot, the creative phrenzy came upon him, his thought rushed forth, and, with a whirr of earthy atoms all round and a tearing of turf, the first of oaks sprang up completed, that also was the origination of a new piece of concrete, but one could hardly say that it was telling a lie. Had his godship been a philosopher instead of a poet, had he buckled and bowed his mind to the nature of things instead of accommodating the shows of things to his desires, the world might have been without oaks to this very day.

Poetical activity being defined generally to be that kind of intellectual activity which results in the production of new matter of the concrete, it follows that there are as many varieties in the exercise of this activity as there are possible forms of an intellectual concrete. To attempt a complete enumeration of the various ways in which imaginative activity may show itself would be tedious; but an instance or two may bring some of the more common of them before the mind.

Digitized by Google

"The sun had just sunk below the tops of the mountains, whose long shadows stretched athwart the valley; but his sloping rays, shooting through an opening of the cliffs, touched with a yellow gleam the summits of the forest that hung upon the opposite steeps, and streamed in full splendour upon the towers and battlements of a castle that spread its extensive ramparts along the brow of a precipice above. The splendour of these illuminated objects was heightened by the contrasted shade which involved the valley below."

MRS. RADCLIFFE.

"Almost at the root
Of that tall pine, the shadow of whose bare
And slender stem, while here I sit at eve,
Oft stretches towards me, like a long straight path,
Traced faintly on the greensward—there, beneath
A plain blue stone, a gentle dalesman lies."

WORDSWORTH.

These are plain instances of that kind of imaginative exercise which consists in the imagination of *scenes* or *objects*. A large proportion of the imaginative activity of men generally, and of authors in particular, is of this kind. It includes pictures and descriptions of all varieties, from the most literal reproductions of the real, whether in country or town, to the most absolute phantasies in form and colour, and from the scale of a single object, such as the moon or a bank of violets, to the scale of a Wordsworthian landscape, or of a Milton's universe with its orbs and interspaces. It may be called descriptive imagination.

Digitized by Google

"And Priam then alighted from his chariot,
Leaving Idæus with it, who remained
Holding the mules and horses; and the old man
Went straight in-doors, where the beloved of Jove,
Achilles sat, and found him. In the room
Were others, but apart; and two alone—
The hero Automedon and Alcinous,
A branch of Mars—stood by him. They had been
At meals, and had not yet removed the board.
Great Priam came, without their seeing him,
And, kneeling down, he clasped Achilles' knees,
And kissed those terrible homicidal hands
Which had deprived him of so many sons."

HOMER.

This is the imagination of *incident*, or narrative imagination. The instance is plain even to baldness; it is direct Homeric narration: but for this very reason it will better stand as a type of that department of imaginative activity to which it belongs. In this department are included all narrations of incidents, whether historical and real, or fictitious and supernatural, from the scale of a single incident as told in a ballad, up to the sustained unity of the epos or drama, as in *Crusoe*, *Don Quixote*, the *Iliad*, the *Divine Comedy*, the *Faery Queene*, *Macbeth*, or *Paradise Lost*. It is hardly necessary to point out that the narration of incident always involves a certain amount of description of scenery.

Digitized by Google

"The Reve was a slender colerike man,
His beard was a shave as nigh as ever he can,
His hair was by his eares round yshorn,
His top was docked like a priest beforne.
Full longe were his legges and full lean,
Ylike a staff; there was no calf yseen."

CHAUCER.

This may stand as a specimen of what is in reality a sub-variety of the imaginative exercise first mentioned, but is important enough to be adverted to apart. It may be called the imagination of *physiognomy* and *costume;* under which head might be collected an immense number of passages from all quarters of our literature. This department, too, will include both the real and ideal—the real, as in Chaucer's and Scott's portraits of men and women; the ideal, as in Spenser's personifications, in Ariosto's hippogriff, or in Dante's Nimrod in a pit in hell, with his face as large as the dome of St. Peter's, and his body in proportion, blowing a horn, and yelling gibberish.

Connected with this in practice, but distinguishable from it, is another variety of imaginative exercise, which may be called the imagination of *states of feeling*. Here is an example:—

"A fig for those by law protected!
Liberty 's a glorious feast;
Courts for cowards were erected;
Churches built to please the priest."

BURNS'S *Jolly Beggars.*

Digitized by Google

This stanza, it will be observed (and we have chosen it on purpose), is, in itself, as little poetical as may be; it is mere harsh Chartist prose. But, in so far as it is an imagined piece of concrete—that is, in so far as it is an imagination by the poet of the state of feeling of another mind, or of his own mind in certain circumstances—it is poetical. This is an important consideration, for it links the poet not only with what is poetical in itself, but with a whole, much larger, world of what is unpoetical in itself. The poet may imagine opinions, doctrines, heresies, cogitations, debates, expositions; there is no limit to his traffic with the moral any more than with the sensuous appearances of the universe: only, as a poet, he deals with all these as concrete things, existing in the objective air, and from which his own mind stands disentangled, as a spade stands loose from the sand it digs, whether sand of gold or sand of silex. The moment any of the doctrines he is dealing with melts into his own personal state of being (which is happening continually), at that moment the poet ceases to be a poet pure, and becomes so far a thinker or moralist in union with the poet. As regards the literary range of this kind of imaginative exercise,—the imagination of states of feeling,—it is only necessary to remember what a large proportion it includes of our lyric poetry, and how far it extends into the epic and the drama, where

Digitized by Google

(and especially in the drama) it forms, together with the imagination of physiognomy and costume, the greater part of what is called invention of *character*.

The foregoing is but a slight enumeration of some of the various modes of imaginative exercise as they are popularly distinguishable; and, in transferring them into creative literature at large, they must be conceived as incessantly interblended, and as existing in all varieties and degrees of association with personal thought, personal purpose, and personal calm or storm of feeling. It is matter of common observation, however, that some writers excel more in one and some more in another of the kinds of imagination enumerated. One writer is said to excel in descriptions, but to be deficient in plot and incident; nay, to excel in that kind of description which consists in the imagination of form, but to be deficient in that which consists in the imagination of colour. Another is said to excel in plot, but to be poor in the invention of character, and in other particulars. In short, the imagination, though in one sense it acts loose and apart from the personality, flying freely round and round it, like a sea-bird round a rock, seems, in a deeper sense, restricted by the same law as the personality in its choice and apprehension of the concrete. The organ of ideality, as the phrenologist would say, is the organ by which man freely bodies forth an ideal objective; and yet, were

Digitized by Google

ideality never so large in a man's head, it would be of no use to apply it, after Keats or Milton, in the direction of white pinks, pansies freaked with jet, sapphire battlements, and crimson-lipped shells, unless there were also a little knot on the eyebrow over the organ of colour.

The poetical tendency of the human mind being this tendency to the ideal concrete, to the imagination of scenes, incidents, physiognomies, states of feeling, and so on—and all men having more or less of this tendency, catering for them in the ideal concrete, very much in the same way as their senses cater for them in the real (so that the imagination of a man might be said to be nothing more than the ghosts of his senses wandering in an unseen world)—it follows that the poet, *par excellence*, is simply the man whose intellectual activity is consumed in this kind of exercise. All men have imagination; but the poet is "of imagination all compact." He lives and moves in the ideal concrete. He teems with imaginations of forms, colours, incidents, physiognomies, feelings, and characters. The ghosts of his senses are as busy in an unseen world of sky, sea, vegetation, cities, highways, thronged markets of men, and mysterious beings belonging even to the horizon of *that* existence, as his real senses are with all the nearer world of nature and

Digitized by Google

life. (But the notable peculiarity lies in this, that every thought of his in the interest of *this* world is an excursion into *that.*) In this respect, the theory which has been applied to the exposition of the Grecian mythology applies equally to poetic genius in general. The essence of the mythical process, it is said, lay in this, that, the earlier children of the earth having no abstract language, every thought of theirs, of whatever kind, and about whatever matter, was necessarily a new act of imagination, a new excursion in the ideal concrete. If they thought of the wind, they did not think of a fluid rushing about, but of a deity blowing from a cave; if they thought of virtue rewarded, they saw the idea in the shape of a visible transaction, in some lone place, between beings human and divine. And so with the poetical mode of thought to this day. Every thought of the poet, about whatever subject, is transacted not mainly in propositional language, but for the most part in a kind of phantasmagoric or representative language, of imaginary scenes, objects, incidents, and circumstances. To clothe his feelings with *circumstance;* to weave forth whatever arises in his mind into an objective tissue of imagery and incident that shall substantiate it and make it visible: such is the constant aim and art of the poet. Take an example. The idea of life occurs to the poet Keats, and how does he express it?

Digitized by Google

"Stop and consider! Life is but a day;
A fragile dew-drop on its perilous way
From a tree's summit; a poor Indian's sleep,
While his boat hastens to the monstrous steep
Of Montmorenci. Why so sad a moan?
Life is the rose's hope while yet unblown;
The reading of an ever-changing tale;
The light uplifting of a maiden's veil;
A pigeon tumbling in clear summer air;
A laughing school-boy, without grief or care,
Riding the springy branches of an elm."

This is true ποίησις. What with the power of innate analogy, what with the occult suasion of the rhyme, there arose first in the poet's mind, contemporaneous with the idea of life, nay, as incorporate with that idea, the imaginary object or vision of the dew-drop falling through foliage. That imagined circumstance is, therefore, flung forth as representative of the idea. But even this does not exhaust the creative force. The idea bodies itself again in the new imaginary circumstance of the Indian in his boat; and that, too, is flung forth. Then there is a rest. But the idea still buds, still seeks to express itself in new circumstance; and five other translations of it follow. And these seven pictures, these seven morsels of imagined concrete, if we suppose them all to be intellectually genuine, are as truly the poet's *thoughts* about life as any seven scientific definitions would be the thoughts of the

Digitized by Google

physiologist or the metaphysician. And so in other instances. Tennyson's *Vision of Sin* is a continued phantasmagory of scene and incident representative of a meaning; and, if the meaning is not plain throughout, it is because it would be impossible for the poet himself to translate every portion of it out of that language of phantasmagory in which alone it came into existence. Again, Spenser's personifications—his grim-hued Horror soaring on iron wings, his Jealousy seated apart and biting his lips, and the rest—are all thoughts expressed in circumstance, the circumstance in this case being that of costume and physiognomy. In short, every thought of the poet is an imagination of concrete circumstance of some kind or other—circumstance of visual scenery, of incident, of physiognomy, of feeling, or of character. The poet's thought, let the subject be what it may, brings him to

> "Visions of all places: a bowery nook
> Will be elysium—an eternal book
> Whence he may copy many a lovely saying
> About the leaves and flowers—about the playing
> Of nymphs in woods and fountains, and the shade
> Keeping a silence round a sleeping maid;
> And many a verse from so strange influence
> That we must ever wonder how and whence
> It came."

Regarding the poet, then, considered in his nature, we may sum up by saying that the act of cogitation

Digitized by Google

with him is nothing else than the *intellectual secretion of fictitious circumstance*—the nature of the circumstance in each case depending on the operation of those mysterious affinities which relate thought to the world of sense. In regarding the poet more expressly as a literary artist, all that we have to do is to vary the phrase, and say—the intellectual *invention* of fictitious circumstance. This will apply to all that is truly poetical in literature, whether on the large scale or on the small. In every case what is poetical in literature consists of the embodiment of some notion or feeling, or some aggregate of notions and feelings, in appropriate imagined circumstances. Thus, in historical or biographical writing, the poetic faculty is shown by the skill, sometimes conscious and sometimes unconscious, with which the figures are not only portrayed in themselves, but set against imagined visible backgrounds, and made to move amid circumstances having a pre-arranged harmony with what they do. The achievement of this, in consistency with the truth of record, is the triumph of the descriptive historian. In fictitious prose-narrative the same poetic art has still freer scope. That a lover should be leaning over a stile at one moment, and sitting under a tree at another; that it should be clear, pure moonlight when Henry is happy, and that the moon should be bowling through clouds, and a dog be heard howling at a farmhouse

Digitized by Google

near, when the same Henry means to commit suicide—are artifices of which every ordinary novelist is master who knows his trade. The giant Grangousier, in Rabelais, sitting by the fire, very intent upon the broiling of some chestnuts, drawing scratches on the hearth with the end of a burnt stick, and telling to his wife and children pleasant stories of the days of old, is an instance of a higher kind, paralleled by many in Scott and Cervantes. And, then, in the epic and the drama! Hamlet with the skull in his hand, and Homer's heroes walking by the πολυφλοίσβοιο! It is the same throughout the whole literature of fiction: always thought expressed and thrown off in the language of representative circumstance. Indeed, Goethe's theory of poetical or creative literature was that it is nothing else than the moods of its practitioners objectivized as they rise. A man feels himself oppressed and agitated by feelings and longings, now of one kind, now of another, that have gathered upon him till they have assumed the form of definite moral uneasiness. If he is not a literary man, he contrives to work off the burden, in some way or other, by the ordinary activity of life—which, indeed, is the great preventive established by nature; but, if he is a literary man, then the uneasiness is but the motive to creation, and the result is a song, a drama, an epic, or a novel. Scheming out some plan or story, which is in itself a kind of

Digitized by Google

allegory of his mood as a whole, he fills up the sketch with minor incidents, scenes, and characters, which are nothing more than the breaking up of the mood into its minutiæ, and the elaboration of these minutiæ, one by one, into the concrete. This done, the mood has passed into the objective; it may be looked at as something external to the mind, which is therefore from that moment rid of it, and ready for another. Such, at least, was Goethe's theory; which, he said, would apply most rigidly to all that he had himself written. Nor would it be difficult, with due explanation, to apply the theory to the works of all other masters of creative or poetical literature. Dante may be said to have slowly translated his whole life into one representative performance.

Several supplementary considerations must be now adduced. The form of the poet's cogitation, we have said, is the evolution not of *abstract propositions* but of *representative concrete circumstances*. But in this, too, there may be degrees of better and worse, of greater and less. Precisely as, of two writers thinking in the language of abstract speculation, we can say, without hesitation, which has the more powerful mind, so of two writers thinking in the other language of concrete circumstance, one may be evidently superior to the other. There is room, in short, for all varieties of greater and less among poets as among other people.

Digitized by Google

Hence the folly of the attempts to exalt poetical genius, merely as such, above other kinds of intellectual manifestation. A man may be constitutionally formed so that he thinks his thoughts in the language of concrete circumstance; and still his thoughts may be very little thoughts, hardly worth having in any language. Both poets and men of science must be tried among their peers. Whether there is a common measure, and what it is; whether there is an intrinsic superiority in the mode of cogitation of the poet over that of the philosopher, or the reverse; and whether and how far we may then institute a comparison of absolute greatness between Aristotle and Homer, between Milton and Kant: these are questions of a high calculus, which most men may leave alone. There is no difficulty, however, when the question is between a Kirke White and a Kant; and when a poor poet, never so genuine in a small way, tells people that his intellect is "genius," while theirs is "talent," he runs a risk of being very unceremoniously treated.

"This palace standeth in the air,
By necromancy placèd there,
That it no tempest needs to fear,
Which way soe'er it blow it:
And somewhat southward toward the noon
There lies a way up to the moon,
And thence the fairy can as soon
Pass to the Earth below it."

Digitized by Google

This is very sweet, and nice, and poetical (it is by Drayton, *not* a small poet, but a considerable one); and yet surely, call it genius or what you will, there was less commotion of the elements when it was produced than when Newton excogitated one of his physical theories.

We may pass to another point. The imagination following the law of the personality, some imaginations are strong where others are weak, and weak where others are strong. In other words, though all poets, as such, express themselves in the language of concrete circumstance, some are greater adepts in one kind of circumstance, others in another. Some are great in the circumstance of form, which is the sculptor's favourite circumstance; others can produce admirable compositions in *chiaroscuro*; others have the whole rainbow on their pallet. And so, some express themselves better in incident, others better in physiognomy and character. All this is recognised in daily criticism. Now, the consequence of the diversity is that it is very difficult to compare poets even amongst themselves. It is not every poet that exhibits an imagination absolutely universal, using with equal ease the language of form, of colour, of character, and of incident. Shakespeare himself, if we may infer anything from his minor poems, and from the carelessness with which he took ready-made plots for his dramas from any quarter,

Digitized by Google

was not so great a master of incident as of other kinds of circumstance, and could hardly have rivalled Homer, or Scott, purely as a narrative poet. How, then, establish a comparative measure, assigning a relative value to each kind of circumstance? How balance what Chaucer has and has not against what Milton has and has not—Chaucer, so skilful in physiognomy, against Milton, who has so little of it, but who has so much else; or how estimate the *chiaroscuro* of Byron as against the richly coloured vegetation of Keats? Here, too, a scientific rule is undiscoverable, and a judgment is only possible in very decided cases, or by the peremptory verdict of private taste.

"Many a night I saw the Pleiads, rising thro' the mellow shade,
Glitter like a swarm of fire-flies tangled in a silver braid."

Who will venture to institute a sure comparison of merit between this exquisite bit of colour from Tennyson and the following simple narrative lines from the same poet?

"All the man was broken with remorse;
And all his love came back a hundredfold;
And for three hours he sobbed o'er William's child,
Thinking of William."

There is yet a *third* thing that has to be taken into consideration. Be a man as truly a poet as it is

Digitized by Google

possible to be, and be the kind of circumstance in which his imagination excels as accurately known as possible, it is not always that he can do his best. The poet, like other men, is subject to inequalities of mood and feeling. Now he is excited and perturbed, because the occasion is one to rouse his being from its depths; now he is placid, calm, and commonplace. Hence variations in the interest of the poetical efforts of one and the same poet. As he cannot choose but think poetically, whether roused or not, even the leisurely babble of his poorest hours, if he chooses to put it forth, will be poetical. But he is not to be measured by this, any more than the philosopher by his casual trifles, or the orator by his speeches on questions that are insignificant. It is even important to remark that it is only at a certain pitch of feeling that some men become poets. Though the essence of poetry consists in a particular mode of *intellectual* exercise, yet the emotional moment at which different minds adopt this mode of exercise may not be the same. The language of concrete circumstance is natural to *all* men when they are very highly excited: all joy, all sorrow, all rage, expresses itself in imaginations. The question then not unfrequently ought to be: At what level of feeling does a man become or profess to be a poet? On this may depend, not the verdict as to the genuineness of his poetry, but the disposition to spare time to

Digitized by Google

listen to it. The most assiduous members of Parliament do not feel bound to be in the House, even when a leader is speaking, unless it is on a Cabinet question or a question of some considerable interest. Some orators know this and reserve themselves; others, delighting in their profession, speak on every question. It is the same with poets, and with the same result. A Keats, though always poetical, may often be poetical with so small a stimulus that only lovers of poetry for its own sake feel themselves sufficiently interested. Why are Milton's minor poems, exquisite as they are, not cited as measures of his genius? Because they are not his speeches on Cabinet questions. Why is Spenser the favourite poet of poets, rather than a popular favourite like Byron? For the same reason that a court of law is crowded during a trial for life or death, but attended only by barristers during the trial of an intricate civil case. The subject chosen by a poetical writer is a kind of allegory of the whole state of his mental being at the moment; but some writers are not moved to allegorize so easily as others, and it is a question with readers what states of mind they care most to see allegorized. This, then, is to be taken into account, in comparing poet with poet. Precisely as an orator is remembered by his speeches on great questions, and as the position of a painter among painters is determined in part by the interest of his subjects, so

Digitized by Google

in a comparison of poets, or of the same poet with himself, the seriousness of the occasion always goes for something. Shakespeare's *Venus and Adonis*, though fine as a poetical study, does not affect one with the same human interest as his plays; and there is a gradation of interest in advancing from leisurely compositions of the sweet sensuous order, such as Keats's *Endymion* and Spenser's *Faery Queene*, to the severe splendour of a *Divina Commedia* or a *Prometheus Vinctus*. True, on the one hand, poets choose their own subjects, so that these themselves are to be taken into the estimate; and, on the other, the very practice of the art of poetical expression on any subject, like the glow of the orator when he begins to speak, leads into unexpected regions. Yet, after all, in weighing a poem against others, this consideration of the emotional level at which it was produced, and of its interest in connexion with the general work and sentiment of the world, is a cause of much perplexity.

"Sweet bird, that shunn'st the noise of folly,
Most musical, most melancholy!
Thee, chantress, oft the woods among
I woo, to hear thy even-song;
And, missing thee, I walk unseen
On the dry, smooth-shaven green,
To behold the wandering moon
Riding near her highest noon,
Like one that hath been led astray

Digitized by Google

Through the heaven's wide pathless way,
And oft, as if her head she bowed,
Stooping through a fleecy cloud.
Oft, on a plat of rising ground,
I hear the far-off curfew sound,
Over some wide-watered shore,
Swinging slow with sullen roar."

How decide between this from Milton's *Penseroso* and this, in so different a key, from Shakespeare's *Lear?*—

"Blow, winds, and crack your cheeks! rage! blow!
You cataracts and hurricanoes, spout
Till you have drenched our steeples, drowned the cocks!
You sulphurous and thought-executing fires,
Vaunt-couriers to oak-cleaving thunderbolts,
Singe my white head! and thou, all-shaking thunder,
Strike flat the thick rotundity o' the world."

A *fourth* consideration, which intrudes itself into the question of our appreciation of actual poetry, and which is not sufficiently borne in mind, is that in almost every poem there is much present besides the pure poetry. Poetry, as such, is cogitation in the language of concrete circumstance. Some poets excel constitutionally in one kind of circumstance, some in another; some are moved to this mode of cogitation on a less, others on a greater, emotional occasion; but, over and above all this, it is to be noted that no poet always and invariably cogitates in the poetical manner. Specu-

Digitized by Google

lation, information, mental produce and mental activity of all kinds, may be exhibited in the course of a work which is properly called a poem on account of its general character; and, as men are liable to be impressed by greatness in every form wherever they meet it, all that is thus precious in the extra-poetical contents of a poem is included in the estimate of the greatness of the poet. One example will suffice. Shakespeare is as astonishing for the exuberance of his genius in abstract notions, and for the depth of his analytic and philosophic insight, as for the scope and minuteness of his poetic imagination. It is as if into a mind poetical in *form* there had been poured all the *matter* that existed in the mind of his contemporary Bacon. In Shakespeare's plays we have thought, history, exposition, and philosophy, all within the round of the poet. The only difference between him and Bacon sometimes is that Bacon writes an essay and calls it his own, while Shakespeare writes a similar essay and puts it into the mouth of a Ulysses or a Polonius. It is only this fiction of a speaker and an audience that retains many of Shakespeare's noblest passages within the pale of strict poetry.

Hitherto we have made no formal distinction between the poet, specifically so called, and the general practitioners of creative literature, of whatever variety.

Digitized by Google

Our examples, indeed, have been taken in the main from those whom the world recognises as poets; but, as far as our remarks have gone, poetry still stands synonymous with the whole literature of imagination. All who express their meaning by the literary representation of scenes, incidents, physiognomies, and characters, whether suggested by the real world or wholly imaginary, are poets. All who, doing this, do it grandly, and manifest a rich and powerful nature, are great poets. Those who excel more in the language of one kind of circumstance are poets more especially of that kind of circumstance—poets of visual scenery, poets of incident and narration, poets of physiognomy, or poets of character and sentiment, as the case may be. Those who are poetical only at a high key, and in the contemplation of themes of large human interest, are the poets who take the deepest hold on the memory of the human race. Finally, those who, having the largest amount of poetic genius, and of the best kind, associate therewith the most extensive array of other intellectual qualities, are the poets of the strongest momentum and the greatest universal chance.

Not a word in all this to exclude imaginative prose-writers. So far, Homer, Plato, Sophocles, Aristophanes, Virgil, Dante, Boccaccio, Chaucer, Cervantes, Spenser, Shakespeare, Milton, Tasso, Molière, Goethe, Richter, Scott, Defoe, and a host of others, are all huddled to-

Digitized by Google

gether, the principal figures of a great crowd, including alike poets and prose-writers. These indeed may, in accordance with considerations already suggested, be distributed into groups, and that either by reference to degree or by reference to kind. But no considerations have yet been adduced that would separate the imaginative prose-writers, as such, from the imaginative verse-writers, as such. Now, though this is good provisionally—though it is well to keep together for a while in the same field of view all writers of imagination, whether bards or prose-writers—yet the universal instinct, not to say the prejudice of association and custom, demands that the poets, as a brotherhood, shall be more accurately defined. How, then, lead out the poets, in the supreme sense, from the general throng where they yet stand waiting? By what device call the poets by themselves into the foreground, and leave the prose-writers behind? By a union of two devices! Go in front of the general crowd, you two: you, flag-bearer, with your richly-painted flag, and you, fluter, with your silver flute! Flap the flag, and let them see it; sound the flute, and let them hear! Lo! already the crowd wavers: it sways to and fro; some figures seem to be pressing forward from the midst; and at last one silver-headed old serjeant steps out in front of all, and begins to march to the sound of the flute. Who is it but old Homer? He is blind

Digitized by Google

and cannot see the flag; but he knows it is there, and the flute guides him. Others and others follow the patriarch, some looking to the flag, and others listening to the flute, but all marching in one direction. Shakespeare comes with the rest, stepping lightly, as if but half in earnest. And thus at last, lured by the flag and by the flute, all the poets are brought out into the foreground. The flag is *Imagery;* the flute is *Verse.* In other words, poets proper are distinguished from the general crowd of imaginative writers by a peculiar richness of language, which is called imagery, and by the use, along with that language, of a measured arrangement of words known as verse.

It is, as Mr. Dallas observes, a disputed point whether Imagery or Verse is to be regarded as the more essential element of poetry. It has been usual, of late, to give the palm to imagery. Thus, it was a remark of Lord Jeffrey—and the remark has almost passed into a proverb—that a want of relish for such rich sensuous poetry as that of Keats would argue a want of true poetical taste. The same would probably be said of Spenser. Mr. Dallas, on the other hand, thinks Verse more essential than Imagery, and in this Leigh Hunt would probably agree with him. The importance attached to a sensuous richness of language as part of poetry is, Mr. Dallas thinks, too great at present; and in opposition to Lord Jeffrey, or at least by way of

Digitized by Google

corrective to his remark about Keats, he proposes that a power of appreciating such severe literary beauty as that of Sophocles shall, more than anything else, be reckoned to the credit of a man's poetical taste. Mr. Dallas, on the whole, is in the right; and this will appear more clearly if we consider what Imagery and Verse respectively are, in relation to poetry.

Imagery in poetry is secondary concrete adduced by the imagination in the expression of prior concrete. Thus, in the *simile*,—

> "The superior Fiend
> Was moving toward the shore, his ponderous shield,
> Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round,
> Behind him cast: the broad circumference
> Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
> Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views
> At evening from the top of Fesole."

Here the primary object in the imagination of the poet is Satan with his shield hung on his shoulders. While imagining this, however, the poet strikes upon a totally distinct visual appearance, that of the moon seen through a telescope, and his imagination, enamoured with the likeness, imparts the new picture to the reader as something additional to the first. Again, take the *metaphor*:—

> "Sky lowered, and, muttering thunder, some sad drops
> Wept at completing of the mortal sin
> Original."

Digitized by Google

Here the process is the same as in the simile, but more unconscious and complete. The concrete object first in the mind (so far at least as these lines are concerned) is the sky dropping rain: in the imagination of this another imagined object, that of a being shedding tears, intrudes itself; the two objects are combined by a kind of identifying flash; and the double concrete is presented to the reader. So, again, with that highest species of metaphor, the *personification* or *vivification*, of which, indeed, the metaphor quoted is an example.

Almost all so-called images may be reduced under one or other of the foregoing heads; and, in any case, all imagery will be found to consist in the use of concrete to help out concrete. Now, as the very essence of the poet consists in the incessant imagination of concrete circumstance, a language rich in imagery is in itself a proof of the possession of poetical faculty in a high degree. *Cæteris paribus*, the more of subsidiary circumstance evolved in intellectual connexion with the main one the higher the evidence of poetical power. There is a likeness, in this respect, between poetical and scientific writers. Some scientific writers, *e.g.* Locke, attend so rigorously to the main thought they are pursuing as to give their style a kind of nakedness and iron straightness; others, *e.g.* Bacon, without being indifferent to the main thought, are so full of intel-

Digitized by Google

lectual matter of all kinds that they enrich every sentence with a *detritus* of smaller propositions related to the one immediately on hand. So with poets. Some poets—as Keats, Shakespeare, and Milton in much of his poetry—so teem with concrete circumstance, or generate it so fast, as their imagination works, that every imagined circumstance as it is put forth from them takes with it an accompaniment of parasitic fancies. Others, as the Greek dramatists and Dante, sculpture their thoughts massively in severe outline. It seems probable that the tendency to excess of imagery is natural to the Gothic or Romantic as distinct from the Hellenic or Classical imagination; but it is not unlikely that the fact that poetry is now read instead of being merely heard, as it once was, has something to do with it. As regards the question *when* imagery is excessive, *when* the richness of a poet's language is to be called extravagance, no general principle can be laid down. The judgment on this point in each case must depend on the particular state of the case. A useful distinction, under this head, might possibly be drawn between the liberty of the poet and the duty of the artist. Keats's *Endymion* one might safely, with reference to such a distinction, pronounce to be too rich; for in that poem there is no proportion between the imagery, or accessory concrete, and the main stem of the imagined circumstance from which

Digitized by Google

the poem derives its name. In the *Eve of St. Agnes*, on the other hand, there is no such fault.

Of Verse, as connected with poetry, various theories have been given. Wordsworth, whose theory is always more narrow than his practice, makes the *rationale* of verse to consist in this, that it provides for the mind a succession of minute pleasurable surprises in addition to the mere pleasure communicated by the meaning. Others regard it as a voluntary homage of the mind to law as law, repaid by the usual rewards of disinterested obedience. Mr. Dallas sets these and other theories aside, and puts the matter on its right basis. Verse *is* an artificial source of pleasure; it *is* an incentive to attention, or a device for economizing attention; and it *is* an act of obedience to law, if you choose so to regard it. All these, however, are merely statements respecting verse as something already found out and existing; not one of them is a theory of verse in its origin and nature. Such a theory, if it is to be sought for at all, must clearly consist in the assertion of this, as a fundamental fact of nature—that, when the mind of man is either excited to a certain pitch, or engaged in a certain kind of exercise, its actions adjust themselves, in a more express manner than usual, to time as meted out in beats or intervals. Mr. Dallas, giving to the statement its most transcendental form, says that the *rationale* of metre is to be deduced from the fact

Digitized by Google

that, inasmuch as Time, according to Kant, is but a leading form of Sense, it must fall under the law of Imagination, the faculty representative of Sense. Quite independent of this philosophic generalization, which it would at least require much time to work down to the ordinary apprehension, there are many facts, some of which Mr. Dallas very acutely points out, all tending to indicate the existence of such a law as we have described. The swinging of a student to and fro in his chair during a fit of meditation, the oratorical see-saw, the evident connexion of mental states with the breathings and the pulse-beats, the power of the tick-tick of a clock to induce reverie, and of the clink-clank of a bell to make the fool think words to it, are all instances of the existence of such a law. Nay, the beginnings of poetical metre itself are to be traced in speech far on this side of what is accounted poetry. There is a visible tendency to metre in every articulate expression of strong feeling; and the ancient Greeks, we are told, used to amuse themselves with scanning passages in the speeches of their great orators.

Without trying to investigate this question farther, we would refer to a consideration connected with it which seems important for our present purpose. The law, as stated hypothetically, is that the mind, *either* when excited to a certain pitch, *or* when engaged in a particular kind of exercise, takes on a marked con-

Digitized by Google

cordance with time as measured by beats. Now, whether is it the first or the second mental condition that necessitates this concordance? Poetry we have all along defined as a special mode of *intellectual* exercise, possible under all degrees of emotional excitement—the exercise of the mind *imaginatively*, or in the figuring forth of concrete circumstance. Is it, then, poetry as such that requires metre, or only poetry by virtue of the emotion with which it is in general accompanied—that emotion either preceding and stimulating the imaginative action, or being generated by it, as heat is evolved by friction? The question is not an easy one. On the whole, however, one might incline to the belief that, though poetry and passion have metre for their common servant, it is on passion, and not on poetry, that metre holds by original tenure. Is not metre found in its highest and most decided form in lyrical poetry, narrative poetry having less, and dramatic poetry still less of it? and wherever, in the course of a poem, there is an unusual metrical boom, is not the passage so characterized always found to be one not so much of pure concrete richness as of strong accompanying passion? What, then, if song, instead of being, as common language makes it, the complete and developed form of poetry, should have to be scientifically defined as the complete and developed form of oratory, passing into poetry only

Digitized by Google

in as far as passion, in its utterance, always seizes and whirls with it shreds and atoms of imagined circumstance? If this is the true theory, Verse belongs, by historical origin, to Oratory, and lingers with Poetry only as an entailed inheritance.

Prose, then, *may*, as we have said, make inroads upon that region of the literature of the concrete which has hitherto been under the dominion of verse. But, on the other hand, verse, whatever it may have been in its origin, exists now, like many other sovereignties, by right of expediency, constitutional guarantee, and the voluntary submission of those who are its subjects. And here it is that the theories of Wordsworth and others have their proper place. They are theories of verse, not in its origin, but in its character as an existing institution in the literature of the concrete. They tell us what we can now do intellectually by means of verse which we could not do if her royalty were abolished. They point to the fact that in literature, as in other departments of activity, law and order, and even the etiquette of artificial ceremonial, though they may impose intolerable burdens on the disaffected and the boorish, are but conditions of liberty and development to all higher, and finer, and more cultured natures. In short (and this is the important fact), metre, rhyme, and the like, are not only devices for the sweet and pleasant conveyance of the poet's meaning after it is formed; they are

Digitized by Google

devices assisting beforehand in the creation of that meaning. They are devices so spurring and delighting the imagination, while they chafe and restrain it, that its thoughts and combinations in the world of concrete circumstance are more rich, more rare, more occult, more beautiful, than they would otherwise be. Like the effect of the music on the fountain and the company of Bacchanals in Tennyson's strange vision is the effect of verse on poetical thought:

"Then methought I heard a mellow sound,
Gathering up from all the lower ground;
Narrowing in to where they sat assembled,
Low, voluptuous music winding trembled,
Wov'n in circles: they that heard it sigh'd,
Panted hand in hand with faces pale,
Swung themselves, and in low tones replied,
Till the fountain spouted, showering wide
Sleet of diamond-drift and pearly hail."

Here we must stop our discussion of the Theory of Poetry. For much that we have left undiscussed, and especially for a philosophical division of poetry according to its kinds, we must refer to Mr. Dallas. We recommend his book highly and cordially. There is perhaps a stronger dash of what may be called Okenism in his style of speculation than some readers may like: as, for example, in his systematic laying out of everything into corresponding threes or triads. Poetry

Digitized by Google

figures throughout this treatise as a compound result of three laws—the laws of unconsciousness, the law of harmony, and the law of imagination; which laws are supreme respectively in three kinds of poetry—lyrical poetry, epic poetry, and dramatic poetry; which three kinds of poetry, again, correspond historically with Eastern, primitive, or divine art, Grecian, antique, or classical art, and Western, modern, or romantic art; which historical division, again, corresponds philosophically with such trinities as these—I, he, thou; time future, time past, time present; immortality, God, freedom; the good, the true, the beautiful. All this, stated thus abruptly and without explanation, may seem hopeless matter to some; but even they will find in the book much that will please them, in the shape of shrewd observation and lucid and deep criticism, valuable on its own account, and very different from what used to be supplied to the last age by *its* critics.

Digitized by Google

VI.

PROSE AND VERSE: DE QUINCEY.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

VI.

PROSE AND VERSE: DE QUINCEY.[1]

IN the Preface to this series of volumes (which is intended to be a more perfect accomplishment, under the author's own editorship, of a scheme of literary collection already executed very creditably by an American publisher) Mr. De Quincey ventures on something rather unusual. He ventures on a theoretical classification of his own writings for the benefit of critics. The following is the passage in which he states this classification and the grounds of it:—

"Taking as the basis of my remarks the collective American edition, I will here attempt a rude general classification of all the articles which compose it. I distribute them grossly into three classes:—

"*First*, into that class which proposes primarily to amuse the reader; but which, in doing so, may or may not happen occasionally to reach a higher station, at which the amusement passes into an impassioned interest. Some papers are merely playful; but others

[1] *British Quarterly Review*, July, 1854.—"Selections Grave and Gay, from Writings published and unpublished." By Thomas De Quincey. Vols. I. and II., containing "Autobiographic Sketches." Edinburgh, 1853–4.

Digitized by Google

have a mixed character. These present *Autobiographic Sketches* illustrate what I mean. Generally, they pretend to little beyond that sort of amusement which attaches to any real story, thoughtfully and faithfully related, moving through a succession of scenes sufficiently varied, that are not suffered to remain too long upon the eye, and that connect themselves at every stage with intellectual objects. But, even here, I do not scruple to claim from the reader, occasionally, a higher consideration. At times, the narrative rises into a far higher key. . . .

"Into the *second* class I throw those papers which address themselves purely to the understanding as an insulated faculty, or do so primarily. Let me call them by the general name of essays. These, as in other cases of the same kind, must have their value measured by two separate questions. A.—What is the problem, and of what rank in dignity or use, which the essay undertakes? And next—that point being settled—B.—What is the success obtained? and (as a separate question) What is the executive ability displayed in the solution of the problem? This latter question is naturally no question for myself, as the answer would involve a verdict upon my own merit. But, generally, there will be quite enough in the answer to Question A for establishing the value of any essay on its soundest basis. *Prudens interrogatio est dimidium scientiæ:* skilfully to frame your question is half-way towards insuring the true answer. Two or three of the problems treated in these essays I will here rehearse [Mr. De Quincey here cites, as examples of the kind of writings which he refers to the second

Digitized by Google

class, his essays on the following subjects:—*Essenism, The Cæsars,* and *Cicero*]. These specimens are sufficient for the purpose of informing the reader that I do not write without a thoughtful consideration of my subject; and, also, that to think reasonably upon any question has never been allowed by me as a sufficient ground for writing upon it, unless I believed myself able to offer some considerable novelty. Generally, I claim (not arrogantly, but with firmness) the merit of rectification applied to absolute errors, or to injurious limitations of the truth.

"Finally, as a third class, and, in virtue of their aim, as a far higher class of compositions, included in the American collection, I rank *The Confessions of an Opium-Eater,* and also (but more emphatically) the *Suspiria de Profundis.* On these, as modes of impassioned prose, ranging under no precedents that I am aware of in any literature, it is much more difficult to speak justly, whether in a hostile or a friendly character. As yet neither of these two works has ever received the least degree of that correction and pruning which both require so extensively; and of the *Suspiria* not more than perhaps one-third has yet been printed. When both have been fully revised, I shall feel myself entitled to ask for a more determinate adjudication on their claims as works of art. At present I feel authorized to make haughtier pretensions in right of their *conception* than I shall venture to do under the peril of being supposed to characterize their *execution.* Two remarks only I shall address to the equity of my reader. First, I desire to remind him of the perilous difficulty besieging all attempts to clothe in words the visionary scenes derived from the world of dreams, where a single

Digitized by Google

false note, a single word in a wrong key, ruins the whole music; and, secondly, I desire him to consider the utter sterility of universal literature in this one department of impassioned prose—which certainly argues some singular difficulty, suggesting a singular duty of indulgence in criticising any attempt that even imperfectly succeeds. The sole Confessions, belonging to past times, that have at all succeeded in engaging the attention of men, are those of St. Austin and of Rousseau. The very idea of breathing a record of human passion, not into the ear of the random crowd, but of the saintly confessional, argues an impassioned theme. Impassioned, therefore, should be the tenor of the composition. Now, in St. Augustine's Confessions is found one most impassioned passage—viz., the lamentation for the death of his youthful friend in the fourth book; one, and no more. Farther, there is nothing. In Rousseau there is not even so much. In the whole work there is nothing grandly affecting but the character and the inexplicable misery of the writer."

No one acquainted with Mr. De Quincey's writings will deny the soundness and the completeness of this classification; nor do we think that a critic, proposing to himself so ambitious a task as an appreciation of Mr. De Quincey's genius as a whole, could do better than quietly assume it, and proceed to examine Mr. De Quincey's merits, first as a writer of interesting memoirs, secondly, as an essayist or elucidator of difficult historical and other problems, and, lastly, as an almost

Digitized by Google

unique practitioner of a peculiar style of imaginative or highly impassioned prose. Such an examination, conducted never so rigorously, if by a competent person, would confirm the impression, now entertained on all hands, that among the most remarkable names in the history of English literature for many a day must be ranked that of Thomas De Quincey. *Our* purpose, however, is by no means so extensive. We do not mean to comment on Mr. De Quincey as a writer of memoirs and narratives, nor to cull from his numerous contributions in that department—the present two volumes included—any of the delightful reminiscences with which they abound. We do not mean, either, to follow Mr. De Quincey through any of the various tracks of speculation into which his pure intellectual activity has led him, and thus to exhibit the delicacy and subtlety of his thinking faculty, the range of his observation and knowledge, and the value of his conclusions on obscure and vexed questions. In this department, we believe, he would be found fully entitled to the praise which he has claimed for himself—the praise of having been practically faithful to that theory of literature which maintains that no man is entitled to write upon a subject merely by having something reasonable to say about it, unless that something is also, to some extent, new. It is with Mr. De Quincey, however, in the last of the three aspects in

Digitized by Google

which he has presented himself to notice in the foregoing passage that we propose exclusively to concern ourselves. We thank Mr. De Quincey for having so presented himself. Not only, in so doing, has he indicated, with all due modesty, what he esteems his peculiar and characteristic place in English literature, and the scene and nature of his highest triumphs as a writer; he has also, at the same time, suggested a very curious subject for critical discussion.

By the established custom of all languages, there is a great interval between the mental state accounted proper in prose writing and that allowed, and even required, in verse. A man, for the most part, would be ashamed of permitting himself in prose the same freedom of intellectual whimsy, the same arbitrariness of combination, the same riot of imagery, the same care for the exquisite in sound and form, perhaps even the same depth and fervour of feeling, that he would exhibit unabashed in verse. There is an idea that, if the matter lying in the mind waiting for expression is of a very select and rare kind, or if the mood is peculiarly fine and elevated, a writer must quit the platform of prose, and ascend into the region of metre. To use a homely figure, the feeling is that, in such circumstances, one must not remain in the plainly-furnished apartment on the ground-floor where ordinary business is transacted,

Digitized by Google

but must step up-stairs to the place of elegance and leisure. Take, for example, the following passage from *Comus*:—

"Sabrina fair,
Listen where thou art sitting,
Under the glassy, cool, translucent wave,
In twisted briads of lilies knitting
The loose train of thy amber-dropping hair;
Listen for dear honour's sake,
Goddess of the silver lake—
Listen and save."

If any man, having preconceived exactly the tissue of meaning involved in this passage, had tried to express it in prose, he would have had a sense of shame in doing so, and would have run the risk of being regarded as a coxcomb. Only in verse will men consent, in general, to receive such specimens of the intellectually exquisite; but offer them never so tiny a thing of the kind in verse, and they are not only satisfied, but charmed. Nor is it only with regard to the peculiarly exquisite, or the peculiarly luscious in meaning, that this is true; it is true, also, to a certain extent, of the peculiarly sublime, or the peculiarly magnificent. Thus Samson, soliloquizing on his blindness—

"The vilest here excel me;
They creep, yet see: I, dark, in light exposed
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse, and wrong;

Digitized by Google

Within doors, or without, still as a fool
In power of others, never in my own;
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more than half.
O dark, dark, dark; amid the blaze of noon
Irrecoverably dark, total eclipse,
Without all hope of day!
O, first-created beam, and thou great Word,
Let there be light, and light was over all;
Why am I thus bereaved thy prime decree?
The sun to me is dark
And silent as the moon,
When she deserts the night,
Hid in her vacant interlunar cave."

In prose something equivalent to this might have been permitted by reason of the severe impressiveness of the theme; but, to render the entire mass of thoughts and images acceptable precisely as they are, without retrenchment or toning down, one almost requires to see the golden cincture of the enclasping verse. Take a passage where, this cincture having been purposely removed in the process of translation, the sheer meaning may be seen by itself in a prose-heap. The following is a description from Æschylus, literally translated:—

"So Tydeus, raving and greedy for the fight, wars like a serpent in its hissings beneath the noon-tide heat, and he smites the sage seer, son of Oïcleus, with a taunt, saying that he is crouching to death and battle out of cowardice. Shouting out such words as these, he shakes their shadowy crests, the hairy honours of

Digitized by Google

his helm, while beneath his buckler bells cast in brass are shrilly pealing terror. On his buckler, too, he has this arrogant device—a gleaming sky tricked out with stars, and in the centre a brilliant full moon conspicuous, most august of the heavenly bodies, the eye of night. Chafing thus in his vaunting harness, he wars beside the bank of the river, enamoured of conflict, like a steed champing his bit with rage, that rushes forth when he hears the voice of the trumpet."

Knowing that this is translated from verse, we admire it; but, if it were presented to us as an original effort of description in prose, we should, though still admiring it, feel that it went beyond bounds. What we should feel would be, not that such a description ought not to be given, but that prose is not good enough and leisurely enough to have the honour of containing it. And, so, generally, when a man launches forth in a grand strain, or when he begins to put forth matter more than usually rich and luscious, our disposition is to interrupt him and persuade him to exchange the style for that of metre. "Had we not better step up-stairs?" is virtually what we say on such occasions; and this not ironically, but with a view to hear out what has to be said with greater pleasure. In short, we allow all ordinary business of a literary kind—plain statement, equable narrative, profound investigation, strong direct appeal—to be transacted in prose; we even permit a moderate amount of beauty, of enthusiasm, and of ima-

Digitized by Google

ginative play, to intermingle with the current of prose-composition; but there is a point, marked either by the unusual fineness of the matter of thought, its unusual arbitrariness and luxuriance, its unusual grandeur, or its unusually impassioned character, at which, by a law of custom, a man must either consent to be silent, or must lift himself into verse. On such occasions it is as when a speaker is expected to leave his ordinary place in the body of the house and mount the tribune.

There is an element in the philosophy of this matter which it may be well to attend to before going farther. We have spoken as if the meaning to be uttered were generally already in the mind before the form of utterance is chosen. We have represented the case as if there were already internally prepared by a writer a certain tissue or series of thoughts and images, and as if it were then capable of being made a deliberate question whether he should emit the intellectual whole thus prepared in metre or in prose. But this is not the actual state of the fact. The actual fact is that the meaning that will in any case exist to be expressed is conditioned beforehand by the form of expression selected—in other words, that the matter cogitated does not precede the form of expression and engage this or that form of expression at its option, but that the form of expression assists from the outset in determining the kind of matter that shall be cogitated. This removes a

Digitized by Google

practical difficulty. A man who writes in prose is, by the fact that he does so, kept within the bounds of prose in the character of his mental combinations. Those peculiar finenesses and flights of intellectual activity which are native to verse are then simply not developed. His thoughts stop short precisely at that point of richness, quaintness, or luxuriance, where prose ceases to be prose. That this point will vary according to a writer's taste and faculty does not for the present matter. On the other hand, the writer who uses metre and rhyme does not prosecute his train of meaning independently of them, but partly by their very aid in leading him this way or that. A man who has made up his mind to add to all the other conditions of his thinking these two—first, that he shall think in synchronism with certain metrical beats, and, secondly, that he shall think forward to that point in his mental horizon where he sees the glimmer of a certain predetermined rhyme—such a writer necessarily accustoms himself to a more complex law of cogitation than rules the prose-writer, and moves through an atmosphere of more arbitrary and exquisite and occult suggestions. This may look mechanical; but it is the very *rationale* of verse and its functions. Versifiers are men who have voluntarily, in accordance with some original bent in their nature, submitted their thoughts to a more complex mechanism than ordinary prose-writers, and whose reward is that, when they are

Digitized by Google

such masters of the mechanism as no longer to think of its existence, they can revel in combinations more intimate, extreme, and exquisite than their prose thoughts would be. In reading a passage of verse, therefore, we have to bear in mind that the meaning came in part to be what it is because the verse assisted to create it. Thus, in the passage quoted from *Comus*, it is unnecessary to trouble ourselves with fancying what reception such a dainty little picture would have met with if offered originally in prose; for it is what it is simply because metre and rhyme conspired in the production of it. So, also, in the passage from *Samson Agonistes*, the mass of thoughts and images would have stood somewhat different from the first, had it not been shaped implicitly to fill the mould of the precise metre. Again, in the description from Æschylus, whatever passes the degree of imaginative richness deemed suitable to prose is justified by the recollection that these excesses were perpetrated in verse.

This last instance suggests an observation of some importance. It may happen, and does often happen, that the metrical form may have been necessary to the evolution of a particular piece of meaning, and may yet not be so necessary to the preservation and perpetuation of it, after it has been produced. Only under the condition of metre may a thought of special splendour or beauty have been actually produced; and yet, once it

Digitized by Google

is fairly on this side of the Styx, the metrical mould necessary for its safe conveyance hither may be fractured, and the thought will still stand appreciable on its own merits. And thus it is that much of the greatness of the highest poetry is indestructible by even the rudest process of transmutation into literal prose. The actual matter of Homer's *Iliad* and of the great Greek tragedies might never have existed but for the suggestive power in the minds of the poets of those precise hexameters and iambic and choral measures in which it was imagined and delivered; but much of what is noble in it survives yet in the baldest prose translation. The preciousness of the thought is to be recognised even after the fabric of the verse has been crumbled into the mere form of unmetrical powder.

All this, however, does not affect the practical importance of the fact that custom has established a distinction between what is lawful in prose and what is lawful in verse. True, for the reasons above stated, the distinction causes no one any personal inconvenience. He who prefers to write in prose does so because he finds he can make prose sufficient. The necessity for writing in verse exists only where there is the prior habit, if we may so call it, of thinking in verse. When the thoughts of a prose-writer reach a degree of exquisiteness, or lusciousness, or imaginative grandeur, at which prose refuses to contain them, nature provides

Digitized by Google

the remedy by simply whirling him into verse. He has the option of allowing himself to be so whirled, or of restraining himself, and refusing to go on whenever the said point is reached. He may choose never "to go upstairs," never to put himself into such a strain that it shall be necessary for him to ascend the tribune in order to speak. But here lies the question. Where *is* that ideal point at which a man must either smother what is in his mind or ascend the tribune and speak in verse? What are the limits and capabilities of prose; and through what series of gradations does prose pass into technical and completed verse? If a man refuses to be whirled past the extreme prose point, what amount of farther intellectual possibility, and of what precise kinds, does he thus forego? Is the ulterior region into which verse admits co-extensive with that which it leaves behind; and, if not, what is its measure? Does it overhang the realm of prose like a superior ether, nearer the empyrean, or does it only softly round it to a small measurable distance? Is the relation of prose to verse that of absolute inferiority, or of inferiority in some respects counterbalanced by superiority in others? In short, what is it that verse can do and prose cannot, and what is the value of this special kind of intellectual work which only verse can transact? We have spoken vaguely of the boundary between prose and verse as being marked by a certain degree of fineness, or ex-

Digitized by Google

quisiteness, or occultness, or lusciousness, or arbitrariness, or grandeur, or passionateness, in the matter of thought to be expressed; but we must now seek for a more exact definition, so as to see what proportion of just human thought prose at its utmost will contain, and what residue must either be foregone or relegated to verse.

It will be admitted that for all the purposes of what is called investigation, speculation, generalization, philosophical discussion and exposition, prose is sufficient. There is no need for a man "to step up-stairs" so long as he deals with matter pertaining to what is called the pure understanding. A Kant, a Leibnitz, or a Sir William Hamilton, so far as their pure reasonings are concerned, need never find themselves whirled past the prose point, notwithstanding that the matters about which their reasoning is employed may be the generalities on which the universe rests, and that their conclusions in such matters may be the result of vast force of intellect, and may set the whole world in amaze. The actual reasonings of even a half-inspired Plato may be delivered to their last link without the aid of verse. This, then, is much to say in behalf of poor prose. It ought to silence the absurd chatter of many a versifier, exulting in his technick without any just knowledge of what it really is. The large world-shaking abstraction, the profound of all-penetrating stroke of intellect, the rich

Digitized by Google

shower of fructifying propositions, the iron chain of conquering syllogisms: all these are possible to the prose-writer in a manner and to an extent beyond the legitimate or usual powers of verse. The verse of a Shakespeare, it is true, will teem with matter secreted by the purely intellectual organ, the same being so interfused with the poetic that the superfluity does not seem a fault; and a Wordsworth may, in beautiful metre, reproduce the philosophizings of a Spinoza. But even those masters of verse could do nothing in this department by the help of their iambics which equal power could not have done more rigorously and systematically with the iambics away. In passing into verse, the poet may take such matter with him; but he must treat it in such a way that, from the point of view of the pure thinker, there is a loss of the logical virtue. With all the reverence that exists for verse as distinct from prose, no one will deny that at the present moment there lies imbedded in the prose-treatises of the world a mass of most precious substance distinct from all that can be found in verse.

Again, prose is sufficient for the expression of at least a large proportion of all possible human feeling. It would be difficult to say at what pitch of mere feeling it would be absolutely necessary to go "up-stairs" for the means of adequate expression. Joy, sorrow, indignation, rage, love, hatred—there is ample scope

Digitized by Google

for the expression of these passions within the limits of prose. Impassioned prose oratory can show as splendid renderings of some of these passions as any that can be found in verse. Indeed there are some passions—as, for example, those of laughter and indignation—which find a more natural utterance in prose. And yet it is precisely in this matter of the expression of feeling or passion that we first come in sight of the natural origin of metre. At a certain pitch of fervour or feeling the voice does instinctively lift itself into song. Intense grief breaks into a wail, great joy bursts into a measured shout, pride moves to a slow march; all extreme passion tends to cadence. "And the king was much moved, and went up to the chamber over the gate and wept; and, as he went, thus he said, Oh, my son Absalom, my son, my son Absalom! Would God I had died for thee; Oh, Absalom, my son, my son!" Wherever there is emotion like this, we have a rudimentary metre in its expression; and verse in all its forms is nothing else than the prolongation and extended ingenious application of this hint of nature. It may be laid down as a principle, therefore, that *impassioned* writing tends to the metrical, and that, though this tendency may gratify itself to a great length within the limits of such wild metrical prose as it will itself create for the passing occasion, yet at a certain point in all feelings, and

Digitized by Google

more particularly in such feelings as joy, sorrow, and love, it will overleap the boundary of what in any sense can be called prose, and will seize on that artifice of verse which past custom has provided and consecrated. Walking by the river-side, full of thought and sadness, even the homely rustic minstrel will find it natural to pour forth his feelings to the established cadence of some well-known melody:—

"But minstrel Burn cannot assuage
His woes while time endureth,
To see the changes of this age,
Which fleeting Time procureth:
Full many a place stands in hard case
Where joy was wont beforrow,
With Humes that dwelt on Leader braes,
And Scotts that dwelt on Yarrow."

Here the very tune of the thought seems to keep time with the arm as it moves the bow of an imaginary violin. And so with more modern and more cultured poets. Thus Tennyson:—

"Break, break, break,
On thy cold grey stones, O sea!
And I would that my tongue could utter
The thoughts that arise in me!

O, well for the fisherman's boy,
That he shouts with his sister at play;
O, well for the sailor-lad,
That he sings in his boat on the bay.

Digitized by Google

And the stately ships go on
To their haven under the hill;
But O for the touch of a vanished hand,
And the sound of a voice that is still!

Break, break, break,
At the foot of thy crags, O sea!
But the tender grace of a day that is dead
Will never come back to me."

This is not a case in which the same feeling, to the same intensity, could have been expressed in any form of metrical prose, and in which, therefore, the verse is only adopted to increase the beauty of the form; it is a case in which the feeling had to overleap the bounds of possible prose, on pain of being mutilated.

There remains now only the field of representative literature, the literature of the concrete. How far does prose stretch over this field; and what portion of it, if any, is the exclusive possession of verse? The field divides itself theoretically into two halves or sections—the domain of mere history and description, in which the business of the writer is with the actual concrete, the actual scenes and events of the world; and the high domain of imagination or fiction, in which the business of the writer is with concrete furnished forth by his own creative phantasy.

Is prose sufficient for all the purposes of historical or descriptive writing; viewed as separately as may

Digitized by Google

be from that department of imaginative writing into which it shades off so gradually? We should say that it is. For all the purposes of exact record, of exact reproduction of fact in all its vast variety of kinds—fact of scenery, fact of biography, fact of history, fact even of transacted passion—prose is sufficient, and verse unnecessary, or even objectionable. For the true and accurate retention and representation of all that man can observe (and a large and splendid function this is) prose is superior to verse; and, when this function is committed to verse, there is an inevitable sacrifice of the pure aim of the function, though that sacrifice may at times be attended with the gain of something supposed to be better. That this statement may not be immediately assented to will arise from a confusion of the descriptive and the imaginative. Thomson's *Seasons* and much of Wordsworth's poetry are called descriptive compositions; but, properly considered, they are not records, but the imaginative use of records. Again, Homer is a narrative poet; but narration with him is but a special use of the imaginative faculty. Isolate strictly the department of historical or descriptive writing proper from that into which it so readily shades off, and prose is the legitimate king of it. We can conceive but two apparent exceptions—first, where verse itself is one of the facts to be recorded; and, secondly, where the

Digitized by Google

historian or the describer waxes so warm in the act of description that he approaches the singing point. In the first case, verse must be treated as any other fact; that is, it must be represented accurately by being quoted—which, however, is a prose feat. In the second case, it is not the facts that the historian sings, but his own impassioned feeling about them: a matter already provided for under another head.

And now for the real tug of war. What are the relative capabilities of Prose and Verse in the great field of fictitious or imaginative literature? It is needless to say that here it is that, by the universal impression of mankind, Verse is allowed the superior rank of the two sisters. The very language we use implies this. The word *poetry* literally means creation or fiction, and is thus co-extensive with the whole field of literature under notice. And yet it is by a deviation from the common usage of speech that we use the word poetry in this its wide etymological sense. When we speak of a poet, we mean, unless we indicate otherwise, a man who writes in verse; when we speak of English poetry, we mean the library of English books written in verse. This is significant. It indicates the belief that the essential act of ποίησις is somehow connected with the metrical tendency, and best transacts itself in alliance with that tendency. In other words, it implies a conviction

Digitized by Google

that, when the mind sets itself to work in that peculiar manner which we designate by the term imagination or imaginative exercise, the assumption of the metrical form of expression is natural, and perhaps in some cases essential, to it. And yet this is contradicted at once, to some extent, by palpable fact. In the prose literature of all languages there is a vast proportion of works in which the prevailing intention of the authors is that of strict *ποίησις*, the strict invention and elaboration of an imaginary or fictitious concrete. There is the novel; there is the prose romance; there is a prose literature of imagination in various forms. *Robinson Crusoe, Don Quixote,* the *Waverley Novels,* are prose efforts of a kind as strictly falling under the head of *ποίησις* or creation, in its widest sense, as the *Prometheus Vinctus, Paradise Lost,* or Tennyson's *Princess.* Accordingly, we do sometimes rank the writers of imaginative prose among poets or "makers." The question, then, arises: can we, by philosophical investigation, or by the examination of actual instances, determine in what precise conditions it is that the generic act of *ποίησις*, or imaginative exercise, disdains the level ground of prose, and even its highest mountain-tops, and rises instinctively and necessarily on the wings of verse?

There are various kinds of *ποίησις*, or imaginative exercise, according to the species of concrete imagined.

Digitized by Google

There is the *ποίησις* of mere inanimate objects and scenery, as in much of Thomson; there is the *ποίησις* of physiognomy and costume, as in much of Scott and Chaucer; there is the *ποίησις* of incident and action, as in narrative poetry; there is the *ποίησις* of feelings and states of mind, as in songs; there is, as an extension of this last, the *ποίησις* of character. From the masterly exercise of these different kinds of *ποίησις* in different forms of combination arise the great kinds of poetry—the descriptive, the epic, the dramatic, and the lyric. But out of this objective classification of the varieties of imaginative exercise can we derive the clue we seek? At first sight not. If Thomson and Wordsworth describe imaginary scenes in verse, so do Dickens and Scott and a thousand others in prose; if we have admirable delineations of physiognomy and costume in the *Canterbury Pilgrimage*, so also have we in the *Waverley Novels;* if the *Iliad* is an effort of narrative imagination, so also is *Don Quixote;* if feelings and characters are represented in song and the Iambic drama, so are they also in prose fiction. And yet, as was hinted at the outset, there does seem to be a condition of the matter imagined such that prose will not generally contain and convey that matter. What is that condition? The instances cited at the outset served vaguely to indicate it. In the quotation from Milton, and in

Digitized by Google

that from Æschylus, it was felt that there was something in the actual matter presented by the passages that would have had to be parted with if the medium had been prose. Thus, in the first passage, it was felt that the image of Sabrina

> "Under the glassy, cool, translucent wave,
> In twisted braids of lilies knitting
> The loose train of her amber-dropping hair,"

was too dainty for prose. Again, in the passage from Æschylus, it was felt that the description in the following sentence would have sustained some reduction if the composition had originally been in the prose form:

> "On his buckler, too, he had this arrogant device—a gleaming sky tricked out with stars, and in the centre a brilliant full moon conspicuous (most august of the heavenly bodies, the eye of night)."

Prose might have given all of this as far as the parenthesis, but there it would have stopped.

So far as we had come to any conclusion from these instances as to the precise character of that concrete which prose instinctively refuses to carry, and which is yet welcome if it is presented in verse, we defined it as consisting in a certain unusual degree of richness, lusciousness, exquisiteness, arbitrariness, occultness, grandeur, or passionateness. We will now limit the catalogue of qualities to these two, richness and arbi-

Digitized by Google

trariness; and we will aver, as an approximation to the truth, that the character of a combination by the imaginative faculty which determines that it must take place in verse is either an unusual degree of richness or an unusual degree of arbitrariness. This may not appear to reserve for verse a sufficient monopoly of the great intellectual function of *ποίησις*; but, duly interpreted, it will be found to correspond with the fact. It is not, we believe, the mere grandeur or magnificence of a phantasy, it is not its mere fineness, or delicacy, or exquisiteness, that *necessarily* renders prose incapable of it; it is chiefly its richness, or its arbitrariness. The limits of prose as regards the quality of passionateness have already been suggested under a former head. What we call an "impassioned imagination" is a mixed thing, consisting of an objective phantasy, with a peculiar subjective mood breathed through it: it is *ποίησις* in conjunction with *πάθησις*; and, having already considered when it is that *πάθησις* breaks out into singing, we are now concerned only with the distinct inquiry at what point, if at any, *ποιησις* itself insists on becoming metrical.

In the first place, then, there is a peculiar *richness* of literary concrete of which prose seems to be incapable. By richness of concrete we mean very much what is meant by excess of imagery. Let there be a splendid single combination of the poetical faculty—a splendid

Digitized by Google

imaginary scene, a splendid imaginary incident or action, a splendid imaginary state of feeling or character—and prose will surely and easily compass it. The severe story of a Greek drama may be told in outline in noble prose; nay, each incident in such a drama may be rendered in a prose narrative so as to be impressive and effective. The visual fancy of the blind Earl and his guide on the cliff at Dover, or of Milton's Satan alighting on the orb of the sun and darkening it like a telescopic spot, may also be outlined in prose so as finely to affect the imagination. And so, universally, a single imagined circumstance, however grand, or a moderately sparse tissue of imagined circumstances, may be delivered in prose. But, when the outline is thickly filled in with imagery; when, in the expression of the main circumstance already imagined, masses of subsidiary circumstance are adduced; when the stem of the original poetic thought does not proceed straight and shaft-like, but is clustered round with rich parasitic fancies: then prose begins to despair. Thus, in Alexander Smith's image descriptive of the commencement of a friendship between one youth, the speaker, and another whom he admired:—

> "An opulent soul
> Dropt in my path like a great cup of gold,
> All rich and rough with stories of the gods."

Digitized by Google

Here the main fancy, the cup of gold dropped in the youth's path, is perfectly within the compass of imaginative prose; but only a daring prose-writer would have turned the cup so lovingly to show its chasing—or, as we say, would have so dallied with the image. Again, in the fine stanza from Keats's *Eve of St. Agnes*:—

> "And still she slept an azure-lidded sleep,
> In blanched linen, smooth, and lavender'd;
> While he from forth the closet brought a heap
> Of candied apple, quince, and plum, and gourd;
> With jellies soother than the creamy curd,
> And lucent syrops, tinct with cinnamon;
> Manna and dates, in argosy transferred,
> From Fez; and spiced dainties, every one,
> From silken Samarcand to cedar'd Lebanon."

In some very luscious prose, such as we find in the *Arabian Nights*, we might have had the picture as elaborately finished, and even the same express catalogue of dainties; but one or two of the touches of subsidiary circumstance, as in the first, seventh, and last lines, would have been almost certainly omitted. Again, much more visibly, in the following passage from *Paradise Lost*, describing Satan defying Gabriel and his host of warrior-angels.

> "While thus he spake, the angelic squadron bright
> Turned fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns

Digitized by Google

Their phalanx, and began to hem him round
With ported spears, as thick as when a field
Of Ceres, ripe for harvest, waving bends
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind
Sways them: the careful ploughman doubting stands,
Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan alarmed,
Collecting all his might, dilated stood,
Like Teneriffe, or Atlas, unremoved:
His stature reached the sky, and on his crest
Sat Horror plumed."

Here, it is obvious, verse has left prose caught in the thicket. The main circumstance could have been represented in prose; and prose might have dared one or two of the strokes of subsidiary imagination; but such a profusion of simile and metaphor in so short a space would have bewildered and encumbered it. And so, generally, we may consider it as made out that prose is incapable of so rich a literary concrete as verse may justly undertake, and that, where prose deals with pure poetic matter, a certain comparative thinness or sparseness is requisite in the texture of that matter, however bold or fine or grand may be the separate imaginations which compose it. Hence it is, we think, that ancient classical poetry, and especially Greek epic and dramatic poetry, is more capable, as a whole, of retaining its impressiveness when translated into prose than most modern

Digitized by Google

poetry when similarly treated. The ancient poetry was more severe, delighting in imaginations clearly and separately sculptured; the modern muse favours richness of subsidiary imagery, and delights in ornamenting even its largest creations with minute tracery.

In the second place, a certain degree of *arbitrariness* in an imaginative combination seems to place it beyond the capacity of ordinary prose. Our meaning will be best seen by an example or two. When Shelley says,

> "Life, like a dome of many-coloured glass,
> Stains the white radiance of eternity,"

he presents to the mind a singularly beautiful image or combination, which is at once accepted and enjoyed. Yet it is a combination so different from anything likely to have suggested itself to the logical understanding, or even to the imagination as swayed and directed by the logical understanding, that we question if it could have been arrived at but for that extraordinary nimbleness in seizing remote analogies which is communicated to the mind when it thinks under the complex law of metre. A prose-writer of great imaginative power will often strike out combinations of a high degree of arbitrariness, but rarely will he feel himself entitled to such an

Digitized by Google

excursion into the occult as the above. So, also, in the following passage from Keats:—

"O Sorrow!
Why dost borrow
The natural hue of health from vermeil lips?
To give maiden blushes
To the white-rose bushes?
Or is it thy dewy hand the daisy tips? . . .

O Sorrow!
Why dost borrow
The lustrous passion from a falcon-eye?
To give the glow-worm light?
Or, on a moonless night,
To tinge, on siren shores, the salt sea-spry?"

Here, also, the links of association between idea and idea seem to be too occult, and the entire tissue of images too arbitrary, for prose to have produced a passage exactly equivalent; and yet, as it is presented to us in verse, we have no doubt as to the legitimacy of the combination, and are thankful for it. And the reason again is that the mind, rising and falling on the undulation of metre—poised, so to speak, on metrical wings—is enabled to catch more fantastic and airy analogies, and to dart to greater distances with less sense of difficulty, than when pacing never so majestically the *terra firma* of prose. The following from Tennyson is a fine instance of the same:—

Digitized by Google

"The splendour falls on castle walls,
And snowy summits old in story;
The long light shakes across the lakes,
And the wild cataract leaps in glory.
Blow, bugle, blow; set the wild echoes flying:
Answer, echoes, answer—dying, dying, dying."

Here is a combination the coherence of which is felt by every imaginative mind, and which possesses a singular representative, as distinct from mere expository, power; and yet it almost defies analysis. Tennyson, as one of those poets who have most remarkably restrained themselves to the *essential* domain of verse, not caring to write what prose might have had the power to execute, abounds with similar instances. In Shakespeare, too, who has by no means so restricted himself, but has torn up whole masses of the rough prose-world, and submitted them, as well as the finer matter of poetic phantasy, to the all-crushing power of his verse, we find examples of the same kind, hardly paralleled in the rest of literature. Thus, *ad aperturam*,—

"Thou remember'st
Since once I sat upon a promontory,
And heard a mermaid on a dolphin's back,
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath
That the rude sea grew civil at her song,
And certain stars shot madly from their spheres,
To hear the sea-maid's music."

Digitized by Google

Again:—

"Sit, Jessica; look how the floor of heaven
Is thick inlaid with patines of bright gold.
There's not the smallest orb that thou behold'st
But in his motion like an angel sings,
Still quiring to the young-eyed cherubims."

We will close this series of examples with a very apt one from Milton, describing the loathsome appearance of Sin and her brood at the gates of Hell.

"Far less abhorred than these
Vexed Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts
Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore;
Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, called
In secret, riding through the air she comes,
Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance
With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon
Eclipses at their charms."

All these examples seem to make it clear that there belongs to verse a certain extreme arbitrariness of imaginative association, sometimes taking the character of mere light extravagance, sometimes leading to a ghastly and unearthly effect, and often surprising the mind with unexpected gleams of beauty and grandeur. For, though we have already claimed for prose the capability of pure grandeur and sublimity, we must note here, in the interest of verse, that one source of grandeur is this very license of most arbitrary combination which verse gives.

Digitized by Google

Some light might, perhaps, be cast on this whole question of the relative and essential capabilities of verse and prose by a study of the law of Shakespeare's instinctive shiftings in his dramas between the two modes of writing. In such a study it would require to be premised that, as Shakespeare stands, by birthright and choice, on the verse side of the river, and only makes occasional excursions to the prose side, it is to be expected that his practice will indicate rather the range within which prose has the sole title than the extent of ground over which it may expatiate as joint-proprietor. Forbearing for the present, however, any such interesting inquiry, let us be content with the approximate conclusions to which we have independently come. These may be recapitulated as follows:—That in the whole vast field of the speculative and didactic, prose is the legitimate monarch, receiving verse but as a visitor and guest, who will carry back bits of rich ore and other specimens of the land's produce; that in the great business of record, also, prose is pre-eminent, verse but voluntarily assisting; that in the expression of passion, and the work of moral stimulation, verse and prose meet as co-equals, prose undertaking the rougher and harder duty, where passion intermingles with the storm of current doctrine, and with the play and conflict of social interests—sometimes, when thus engaged, bursting forth into such

Digitized by Google

strains of irregular music that verse takes up the echo and prolongs it in measured modulation, leaving prose rapt and listening to hear itself outdone; and, lastly, that in the noble realm of poetry or imagination prose also is capable of all exquisite, beautiful, powerful, and magnificent effects, but that, by reason of a greater ease with fancies when they come in crowds, and of a greater range and arbitrariness of combination, verse here moves with the more royal gait. And thus Prose and Verse are presented as two circles or spheres, not entirely separate, as some would make them, but intersecting and interpenetrating through a large portion of both their bulks, and disconnected only in two crescents outstanding at the right and left, or, if you adjust them differently, at the upper and lower extremities. The left or lower crescent, the peculiar and sole region of prose, is where we labour amid the sheerly didactic or the didactic combined with the practical and the stern; the right or upper crescent, the peculiar and sole region of verse, is where *πάθησις* at its utmost thrill and ecstasy interblends with the highest and most daring *ποίησις*.

What Mr. De Quincey, in his clear and modest self-appreciation, claims as one of his titles to a place in English literature, if not as his most valued title, is that, being expressly a prose writer, he has yet ad-

Digitized by Google

vanced farther into the peculiar and established domain of verse, as we have just defined it, than almost any othe. prose writer in the language. In the passage we quoted from him at the beginning of the paper, he represents himself as almost a unique artificer in at least one department of impassioned and imaginative prose—that which partakes of the character of personal confessions. In universal literature he can refer but to one passage, in the *Confessions of St. Augustine,* as coming within the same literary definition as parts of his own *Opium Eater* and of his *Suspiria de Profundis.* This is likely to be true, because Mr. De Quincey says it; but it is well to bear in mind (more especially as there is a certain ambiguity in Mr. De Quincey's expression—"the utter sterility of universal literature in this one department of impassioned prose") —that, if there has not been much of impassioned prose-writing of this one species, the literature of all languages contains noble specimens of impassioned and imaginative prose of one kind or another. To name the first example that occurs to us, Milton's prose works contain passages of such grandeur as almost to rival his poetry. Let the following stand as a specimen: it is the concluding passage of his pamphlet on the *Causes that have hindered the Reformation in England,* written in the form of an epistle to a friend.

"Oh! Sir, I do now feel myself enwrapt on the

Digitized by Google

sudden into those mazes and labyrinths of dreadful and hideous thoughts that which way to get out or which way to end I know not, unless I turn mine eyes, and, with your help, lift up my hands, to that eternal and propitious Throne where nothing is readier than grace and refuge to the distresses of mortal suppliants; and as it were a shame to leave these serious thoughts less piously than the heathen were wont to conclude their graver discourses—

"Thou, therefore, that sitst in light and glory unapproachable, Parent of Angels and Men! next, thee I implore, Omnipotent King, Redeemer of that lost remnant whose nature thou didst assume, Ineffable and Everlasting Love! and Thou, the third subsistence of Divine Infinitude, Illumining Spirit, the joy and solace of created things!—one tri-personed Godhead! look upon this thy poor and almost spent and expiring Church; leave her not thus a prey to these importunate wolves, that wait and think long till they devour thy tender flock—these wild boars that have broke into thy vineyard, and left the print of their polluting hoofs on the souls of thy servants. Oh! let them not bring about their damned designs that now stand at the entrance of the bottomless pit, expecting the watchward to open and let out those dreadful locusts and scorpions to reinvolve us in that pitchy cloud of infernal darkness, where we shall never more see the sun of thy truth again, never hope for the cheerful dawn, never more hear the bird of morning sing. Be moved with pity at the afflicted state of this our shaken monarchy, that now lies labouring under her throes, and struggling against the grudges of more dreaded calamities.

"Oh! Thou, that after the impetuous rage of five

Digitized by Google

bloody inundations and the succeeding sword of intestine war, soaking the land in her own gore, didst pity the sad and ceaseless revolution of our swift and thick-coming sorrows—when we were quite breathless, didst motion peace and terms of covenant with us, and, having first well-nigh freed us from anti-Christian thraldom, didst build up this Britannic empire to a glorious and enviable highth, with all her daughter islands about her—stay us in this felicity; let not the obstinacy of our half-obedience and will-worship bring forth that viper of sedition that for these fourscore years hath been breeding to eat through the entrails of our peace; but let her cast her abortive spawn without the danger of this travailing and throbbing kingdom, that we may still remember, in our solemn thanksgivings, how for us the northern ocean, even to the frozen Thule, was scattered with the proud shipwracks of the Spanish Armada, and the very maw of hell ransacked, and made to give up her concealed destruction, ere she could vent it in that horrible and damned blast.

"Oh, how much more glorious will those former deliverances appear, when we shall know them not only to have saved us from greatest miseries past, but to have reserved us for greatest happiness to come! Hitherto Thou hast but freed us, and that not fully, from the unjust and tyrannous chain of thy foes; now unite us entirely, and appropriate us to Thyself; tie us everlastingly in willing homage to the prerogative of thy Eternal Throne.

"And now we know, O Thou, our most certain hope and defence, that thine enemies have been consulting all the sorceries of the Great Whore, and have joined their plots with that sad intelligencing tyrant that

Digitized by Google

mischiefs the world with his mines of Ophir, and lies thirsting to revenge his naval ruins that have larded our seas: but let them all take counsel together, and let it come to nought; let them decree and do Thou cancel it; let them gather themselves and be scattered; let them embattle themselves and be broken; let them embattle and be broken, for Thou art with us.

"Then, amidst the hymns and halleluiahs of saints, some one may perhaps be heard offering at high strains, in new and lofty measures, to sing and celebrate thy divine mercies and marvellous judgments in this land throughout all ages; whereby this great and warlike nation, instructed and inured to the fervent and continual practice of truth and righteousness, and casting far from her the rags of her old vices, may press on hard to that high and happy emulation, to be found the soberest, wisest, and most Christian people, at that day, when Thou, the Eternal and shortly-expected King, shalt open the clouds to judge the several kingdoms of the world, and, distributing national honours and rewards to religious and just commonwealths, shalt put an end to all earthly tyrannies, proclaiming the universal and mild monarchy through Heaven and Earth, When they undoubtedly, that by their labours, counsels, and prayers, have been earnest for the common good of religion and their country, shall receive, above the inferior orders of the Blessed, the regal addition of Principalities, Legions, and Thrones, into their glorious titles, and, in supereminence of beatific vision progressing the dateless and irrevoluble circle of eternity, shall clasp inseparable hands with joy and bliss in over measure for ever. But they, contrary, that by the impairing and diminution of the true faith, the distresses and

Digitized by Google

servitude of their country, aspire to high dignity, rule, and promotion here, after a shameful end in this life (which God grant them!) shall be thrown down eternally into the darkest and deepest gulf of Hell, where, under the despiteful control, the trample and spurn of all the other Damned, that in the anguish of their tortures shall have no other ease than to exercise a raving and bestial tyranny over them as their slaves and negroes, they shall remain in that plight for ever, the basest, the lowermost, the most dejected, most underfoot and down-trodden vassals of Perdition."

This may pass as a specimen of *impassioned* prose hardly to be matched in the English language. For specimens of what may more properly be called *imaginative* prose we might refer also to English writers, and to some English writers now living. But in this connexion it is perhaps fairest to name that foreign writer who, by the general consent of literary Europe, is accounted *facile princeps* among all prose invaders of the peculiar dominion of verse—the German Jean Paul. All who are acquainted with the writings of Jean Paul must be aware that, whatever is to be said of his genius as a whole or in comparison with that of his compatriot Goethe, in the single faculty of wild and rich prose-poesy he is the most astonishing even of German writers. Passages verifying this might be quoted in scores from his fictions. The famous dream of *Christ and the Universe* is perhaps his grandest and most daring phantasy of the kind;

Digitized by Google

and, had we space, we should quote it. We will quote instead, a shorter and less awful passage—the singularly beautiful conclusion of the novel of *Quintus Fixlein*, describing the solitary walk homewards of a man who has just left two dear friends.

"We were all of us too deeply moved. We at last tore ourselves asunder from repeated embraces; my friend retired with the soul whom he loves. I remained alone behind him with the Night.

"And I walked without aim through woods, through valleys, and over brooks, and through sleeping villages, to enjoy the great Night like a Day. I walked, and still looked, like the magnet, to the region of midnight, to strengthen my heart at the gleaming twilight, at this upstretching aurora of a morning beneath our feet. While night butterflies flitted, white blossoms fluttered, white stars fell, and the white snow-powder hung silvery in the high shadow of the Earth, which reaches beyond the Moon, and which is our Night. Then began the Æolian harp of creation to tremble and to sound, blown on from above; and my immortal soul was a string in this harp. The heart of a brother, everlasting Man, swelled under the everlasting Heaven, as the seas swell under the sun and under the moon. The distant village clock struck midnight, mingling, as it were, with the ever-pealing tone of ancient Eternity. The limbs of my buried ones touched cold on my soul, and drove away its blots, as dead hands heal eruptions of the skin. I walked silently through little hamlets, and close by their outer churchyards, where crumbled upcast coffin-boards were glimmering, while the once-bright eyes that had lain in them were mouldered into

Digitized by Google

grey ashes. Cold thought! clutch not like a cold spectre at my heart: I look up to the starry sky, and an everlasting chain stretches thither, and over, and below; and all is life, and warmth, and light, and all is Godlike or God.

"Towards morning I descried thy late lights, little city of my dwelling, which I belong to on this side the grave; I returned to the earth; and in the steeples, behind the by-advanced great midnight, it struck half-past two. About this hour, in 1794, Mars went down in the west, and the moon rose in the east; and my soul desired, in grief for the noble warlike blood which is still streaming on the blossoms of spring: 'Ah, retire, bloody War, like red Mars; and thou, still Peace, come forth, like the mild divided moon.'"—MR. CARLYLE'S *Translation.*

Even after such a passage as this there are passages in Mr. De Quincey's writings the power of which, as specimens of skill in impassioned and imaginative prose, would be felt as something new. His *Confessions*, his *Suspiria de Profundis*, and even his present volumes of *Autobiographic Sketches*, contain passages which, for weird beauty, and for skill in embodying the impalpable and the visionary, are not surpassed anywhere in poetry. Take the following as an example: it is an attempt to impersonate and generalize in distinct living shapes those various forms or powers of sorrow that hold dominion over man and human life. As there are three Graces, three Fates, and three Furies, so, says De Quincey, there are three Ladies of Sorrow:—

Digitized by Google

"THE THREE LADIES OF SORROW.

"The eldest of the three is named *Mater Lachrymarum*, Our Lady of Tears. She it is that night and day raves and moans, calling for vanished faces. She stood in Rama, when a voice was heard of lamentation —'Rachel weeping for her children and refusing to be comforted.' She it was that stood in Bethlehem on the night when Herod's sword swept its nurseries of innocents, and the little feet were stiffened for ever, which, heard at times as they tottered along floors overhead, woke pulses of love in household hearts that were not unmarked in heaven. Her eyes are sweet and subtle, wild and sleepy by turns; oftentimes rising to the clouds; oftentimes challenging the heavens. She wears a diadem round her head. And I knew by childish memories that she could go abroad upon the winds, when she heard the sobbing of litanies or the thundering of organs, and when she beheld the mustering of summer clouds. This sister, the elder, it is that carries keys more than Papal at her girdle, which open every cottage and every palace. She, to my knowledge, sate all last summer by the bedside of the blind beggar, him that so often and so gladly I talked with, whose pious daughter, eight years old, with the sunny countenance, resisted the temptations of play and village mirth to travel all day long on dusty roads with her afflicted father. For this did God send her a great reward. In the spring-time of the year, and whilst yet her own spring was budding, He took her to Himself. But her blind father mourns for ever over *her;* still he dreams at midnight that the little guiding hand is locked within his own; and still he wakens to a darkness that is *now* within a second and a deeper darkness. This *Mater*

Digitized by Google

Lachrymarum also has been sitting all this winter of 1844-45 within the bedchamber of the Czar, bringing before his eyes a daughter (not less pious) that vanished to God not less suddenly, and left behind her a darkness not less profound. By the power of her keys is it that Our Lady of Tears glides, a ghostly intruder, into the chambers of sleepless men, sleepless women, sleepless children, from Ganges to the Nile, from Nile to Mississippi; and her, because she is the first-born of her house, and has the widest empire, let us honour with the title of 'Madonna.'

"The second sister is called *Mater Suspiriorum*, Our Lady of Sighs. She neither scales the clouds, nor walks abroad upon the winds. She wears no diadem. And her eyes, if they were ever seen, would be neither sweet nor subtle; no man could read their story; they would be found filled with perishing dreams and with wrecks of forgotten delirium. But she raises not her eyes; her head, on which sits a dilapidated turban, droops for ever—for ever fastens on the dust. She weeps not. She groans not. But she sighs inaudibly at intervals. Her sister, Madonna, is oftentimes stormy and frantic—raging in the highest against heaven, and demanding back her darlings. But Our Lady of Sighs never clamours, never defies, dreams not of rebellious aspirations. She is humble to abjectness. Hers is the meekness that belongs to the hopeless. Murmur she may, but it is in her sleep. Whisper she may, but it is to herself in the twilight. Mutter she does at times, but it is in solitary places that are desolate as she is desolate, in ruined cities, and when the sun has gone down to rest. This sister is the visitor of the Pariah, of the Jew, of the bondsman to the oar in Mediterranean

Digitized by Google

galleys, of the English criminal in Norfolk Island, blotted out from remembrance in sweet far-off England, of the baffled penitent reverting his eye for ever upon a solitary grave, which to him seems the altar overthrown of some past and bloody sacrifice, on which altar no oblations can now be availing, whether towards pardon that he might implore, or towards reparation that he might attempt. Every slave that at noonday looks up to the tropical sun with timid reproach, as he points with one hand to the earth our general mother, but for *him* a stepmother, as he points with the other hand to the Bible, our general teacher, but against *him* sealed and sequestered;—every woman sitting in darkness, without love to shelter her head, or hope to illume her solitude, because the heaven-born instincts kindling in her nature germs of holy affections, which God implanted in her womanly bosom, having been stifled by social necessities, now burn sullenly to waste, like sepulchral lamps among the ancients;—every nun defrauded of her unreturning May-time by wicked kinsmen, whom God will judge:—every captive in every dungeon;—all that are betrayed, and all that are rejected, outcasts by traditionary law, and children of *hereditary* disgrace—all these walk with 'Our Lady of Sighs.' She also carries a key; but she needs it little. For her kingdom is chiefly among the tents of shame, and the houseless vagrant of every clime. Yet in the very highest ranks of men she finds chapels of her own; and even in glorious England there are some that, to the world, carry their heads as proudly as the reindeer, who yet secretly have received her mark upon their foreheads.

"But the third sister, who is also the youngest—!

Digitized by Google

Hush! whisper, whilst we talk of *her!* Her kingdom is not large, or else no flesh should live; but within that kingdom all power is hers. Her head, turreted like that of Cybele, rises almost beyond the reach of night. She droops not; and her eyes, rising so high, *might* be hidden by distance. But, being what they are, they cannot be hidden; through the treble veil of crape which she wears, the fierce light of a blazing misery, that rests not for matins or for vespers—for noon of day, or noon of night—for ebbing or for flowing tide—may be read from the very ground. She is the defier of God. She is also the mother of lunacies and the suggestress of suicides. Deep lie the roots of her power; but narrow is the nation that she rules. For she can approach only those in whom a profound nature has been upheaved by central convulsions; in whom the heart trembles and the brain rocks under conspiracies of tempest from without and tempest from within. Madonna moves with uncertain steps, fast or slow, but still with tragic grace. Our Lady of Sighs creeps timidly and stealthily. But this youngest sister moves with incalculable motions, bounding, and with tiger's leaps. She carries no key; for, though coming rarely amongst men, she storms all doors at which she is permitted to enter at all. And *her* name is *Mater Tenebrarum*, Our Lady of Darkness."

In this noble piece of prose, as in the passages from Milton and Richter, no one can fail to remark, in exact accordance with what has been advanced in the course of this essay, that, precisely as the passion gains in force and intensity, and the pure process of poetic

Digitized by Google

combination transacts itself with ease and vigour, the language acquires and sustains a more decided metrical cadence. It would not be difficult to arrange parts of the passages so that what has been printed as prose should present to the eye the appearance of irregular verse. And so, generally, a peculiar rhythm or music will always be found in highly impassioned or imaginative prose. The voice swells with its burthen; the hand rises and falls; the foot beats time. And thus, as we have more than once said, prose passes into verse by visible gradations. Still, there is a clear line of separation between the most metrical prose and what is conventionally recognised as verse; and with all the great effects that may be produced on this side of the line of separation, Prose, as such, is entitled to be credited. And why should not prose do its utmost? Why should we not have more men like Richter and De Quincey, to teach prose its uses and capabilities? "The muse of prose-literature," we have ventured to say on another occasion, "has been very hardly dealt with. We see not why, in prose, there should not be much of that license in the fantastic, that measured riot, that right of whimsy, that unabashed dalliance with the extreme and the beautiful, which the world allows, by prescription, to verse. Why may not prose chase forest-nymphs, and see little green-eyed elves, and delight in peonies and musk-roses, and invoke the

Digitized by Google

stars, and roll mists about the hills, and watch the seas thundering through caverns and dashing against the promontories? Why, in prose, quail from the grand or ghastly on the one hand, or blush with shame at too much of the exquisite on the other? Is Prose made of iron? Must it never weep, never laugh, never linger to look at a buttercup, never ride at a gallop over the downs? Always at a steady trot, transacting only such business as may be done within the limits of a soft sigh on the one hand and a thin smile on the other, must it leave all finer and higher work of imagination to the care of Verse?" All speed, then, to the prose invasion of the peculiar realm of verse! The farther the conquest can proceed, perhaps the better in the end for both parties. The time is perhaps coming when the best prose shall be more like verse than it now is, and the best verse shall not disdain a certain resemblance to prose.

A word in conclusion, to prevent misconception. We have tried to define the special and peculiar domain of Verse; but we have scrupulously avoided saying anything that would imply an opinion that Verse may not, both lawfully and with good effect, go beyond that domain. We have all along supposed the contrary. Verse, merely as a form of expression, has charms of its own. A thought, an incident, or a feeling, which

Digitized by Google

may be perfectly well expressed in prose, may be rendered more pleasing, more impressive, and more memorable, by being expressed in metre or rhyme. If a man has some doctrine or theory which he wishes to expound, there is no reason, if he finds it possible, and chooses to take the trouble, why he should not make the exposition a metrical one; and, if his verses are good, there is every probability that, on account of the public relish for metre in itself, his exposition will take a more secure place in literature than would have been attained by a corresponding piece of didactic prose. So also a witticism, or a description, or a plain, homely story, may often be delivered more neatly, tersely, and delightfully, if it comes in the garb of verse. In the same way, a man may often impress more powerfully some strongly-felt sentiment by throwing it into a series of nervous and hearty lines. In short, we ought to be ready to accept wit in metre, or narrative in metre, or politics in metre, or anything else in metre, when we can get it; and we ought, in every such case, to allow all the additional credit to the author which is due to his skill in so delightful an art as versification. Much of the poetry of Horace, all the satires of Juvenal, the *Hudibras* of Butler, Pope's metrical essays, and many other compositions of tolerably diverse kinds, may be cited as examples of that order of poetry which consists of shrewdness, wit,

Digitized by Google

manly feeling, and general intellectual vigour, manifesting themselves in metre. Who does not admire the literary felicity displayed in such works, and who, having them in his mind, can remain insensible to the claims of verse to range at large wherever it chooses to go? What we wish to make clear, however, is that a distinction may and must be drawn between verse considered as an essential condition of a peculiar kind of thought and verse considered as an optional form of expression which may be chosen, in almost any case, for the sake of its fine and elegant effects. The fact that verse may be regarded in this latter aspect is perhaps the sole justification of nine-tenths of what is called poetry in all languages.

THE END.

LONDON: R. CLAY, SONS, AND TAYLOR, PRINTERS, BREAD STREET HILL.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PROFESSOR MASSON'S WORKS.

LIFE OF JOHN MILTON. Narrated in connection with the Political, Ecclesiastical, and Literary History of his Time. With Portraits. 8vo. Vol. I. 18*s.*; Vol. II. 16*s.*; Vol. III. 18*s.*

DRUMMOND OF HAWTHORNDEN. The Story of his Life and Writings. With Portrait and Vignette engraved by Jeens. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

CHATTERTON: a Story of the Year 1770. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

THE THREE DEVILS: Luther's, Milton's, and Goethe's; and other Essays. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

BRITISH NOVELISTS AND THEIR STYLES. Being a Critical Sketch of the History of British Prose Fiction. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

RECENT BRITISH PHILOSOPHY. A Review, with Criticisms. Including some Comments on Mr. MILL's Answer to Sir WILLIAM HAMILTON. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

EDITED BY PROFESSOR MASSON.

MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited with Introduction, Notes, and an Essay on Milton's English, by Professor MASSON. With Three Portraits, engraved by Jeens and Radcliffe. 3 vols. 8vo. 42*s.*

MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS. Golden Treasury Edition. Edited, with Introduction, Notes, and Memoir, by Professor MASSON. With Two Portraits. 2 vols. 18mo. 9*s.*

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

ESSAYS ON SHAKESPEARE. By KARL ELZE; translated, with the sanction of the Author, by L. DORA SCHMITZ. 8vo. 12*s.*

THE DUKE AND THE SCHOLAR: and other Essays. By T. L. KINGTON OLIPHANT. 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

ESSAYS IN CRITICISM. BY MATTHEW ARNOLD. New Edition, enlarged. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 6*s.*

CHATTERTON: A BIOGRAPHICAL STUDY. By DANIEL WILSON, LL.D., Professor of History and English Literature in University College, Toronto. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

PLAYS AND PURITANS: and other Historical Essays. By the REV. CHARLES KINGSLEY, Canon of Westminster. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

PROSE IDYLLS. By the REV. CHARLES KINGSLEY. Contents:—A Charm of Birds; Chalk-Stream Studies; My Winter Garden; From Ocean to Sea, etc. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

THE FRIENDSHIP OF BOOKS: and other Essays. By the REV. F. D. MAURICE. Edited with preface by THOMAS HUGHES. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

PLUTARCH: HIS LIFE, HIS LIVES, AND HIS MORALS. Five Lectures by R. CHENEVIX TRENCH, D.D., Archbishop of Dublin. Second Edition, revised and enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE INTELLECTUAL LIFE. By P. G. HAMERTON With a Portrait of LEONARDO DA VINCI, etched by LEOPOLD FLAMENG. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

MACMILLAN'S GOLDEN TREASURY SERIES.

Uniformly printed in 18mo, with Vignette Titles by SIR NOEL PATON, T. WOLNER, W. HOLMAN HUNT, J. E. MILLAIS, ARTHUR HUGHES, &c. Engraved on Steel by JEENS. Bound in extra cloth, 4*s.* 6*d.* each volume. Also kept in morocco and calf bindings.

THE GOLDEN TREASURY OF THE BEST SONGS AND LYRICAL POEMS IN THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. Selected and arranged, with Notes, by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE.

THE CHILDREN'S GARLAND FROM THE BEST POETS. Selected and arranged by COVENTRY PATMORE.

THE BOOK OF PRAISE. From the Best English Hymn Writers. Selected and arranged by Lord SELBORNE. A new and enlarged edition.

THE FAIRY BOOK; the Best Popular Fairy Stories. Selected and rendered anew by the Author of "John Halifax, Gentleman."

THE BALLAD BOOK. A Selection of the Choicest British Ballads. Edited by WILLIAM ALLINGHAM.

THE JEST BOOK. The Choicest Anecdotes and Sayings. Selected and arranged by MARK LEMON.

BACON'S ESSAYS AND COLOURS OF GOOD AND EVIL. With Notes and Glossarial Index. By W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.

THE PILGRIM'S PROGRESS from this World to that which is to come. By JOHN BUNYAN.

THE SUNDAY BOOK OF POETRY FOR THE YOUNG. Selected and arranged by C. F. ALEXANDER.

A BOOK OF GOLDEN DEEDS of All Times and All Countries. Gathered and narrated anew by the Author of "The Heir of Redcliffe."

THE POETICAL WORKS OF ROBERT BURNS. Edited, with Biographical Memoir, Notes, and Glossary, by ALEXANDER SMITH. Two Vols.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

GOLDEN TREASURY SERIES—(*Continued*).

THE ADVENTURES OF ROBINSON CRUSOE. Edited from the Original Edition by J. W. CLARK, M.A., fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge.

THE REPUBLIC OF PLATO. Translated into English, with Notes by J. Ll. DAVIES, M.A., and D. J. VAUGHAN, M.A.

THE SONG BOOK. Words and Tunes from the best Poets and Musicians. Selected and arranged by JOHN HULLAH, Professor of Vocal Music in King's College, London.

LA LYRE FRANCAISE. Selected and arranged, with Notes, by GUSTAVE MASSON, French Master in Harrow School.

TOM BROWN'S SCHOOL DAYS. By An OLD BOY.

A BOOK OF WORTHIES. Gathered from the old Histories and written anew by the Author of the "Heir of Redcliffe."

A BOOK OF GOLDEN THOUGHTS. By HENRY ATTWELL, Knight of the Order of the Oak Crown.

GUESSES AT TRUTH. By Two BROTHERS. New Edition.

THE CAVALIER AND HIS LADY. Selections from the Works of the First Duke and Duchess of Newcastle. With an Introductory Essay by EDWARD JENKINS, Author of "Ginx's Baby," &c.

THEOLOGIA GERMANICA. Translated from the German, by SUSANNA WINKWORTH. With a Preface by the Rev. CHARLES KINGSLEY, and a Letter to the Translator by the CHEVALIER BUNSEN, D.D.

SCOTTISH SONG: A SELECTION OF THE CHOICEST LYRICS OF SCOTLAND. Compiled and arranged with brief Notes by MARY CARLYLE AITKEN.

MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS. With Introductions, Notes, and Memoir, by Professor MASSON. With Two Portraits engraved by JEENS. Two Vols.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

MACMILLAN AND CO.'S GLOBE LIBRARY.

Beautifully printed on toned paper, and bound in extra cloth, with gilt edges, price *4s. 6d.* each; and in plain cloth, price *3s. 6d.* each.

Also kept in various morocco and calf bindings, at moderate prices.

The *Saturday Review* says:—"The Globe Editions are admirable for their scholarly editing, their typographical excellence, their compendious form, and their cheapness."

The *Daily Telegraph* calls it "a series yet unrivalled for its combination of excellence and cheapness."

The following are Now Ready:—

SHAKESPEARE'S COMPLETE WORKS. Edited by W. G. CLARK, M.A., and W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A. With Glossary.

"A marvel of beauty, cheapness, and compactness. . . . For the busy man, above all for the working student, this is the best of all existing Shakespeares."—*Athenæum.*

MORTE D'ARTHUR. SIR THOMAS MALORY'S Book of King Arthur, and of his Noble Knights of the Round Table. The Edition of Caxton, revised for Modern Use. With an Introduction, Notes, and Glossary, by Sir EDWARD STRACHEY.

"It is with perfect confidence that we recommend this edition of the old romance to every class of readers."—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

BURNS'S COMPLETE WORKS. The Poems, Songs, and Letters. Edited, with Glossarial Index and Biographical Memoir, by ALEXANDER SMITH.

"Admirable in all respects."—*Spectator.*

ROBINSON CRUSOE. Edited, after the Original Editions, with Biographical Introduction, by HENRY KINGSLEY.

"A most excellent, and in every way desirable edition."—*Court Circular.*

SCOTT'S POETICAL WORKS. With Biographical and Critical Essay, by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE.

"We can almost sympathise with a middle-aged grumbler, who, after reading Mr. Palgrave's Memoir and Introduction, should exclaim, 'Why was there not such an edition of Scott when I was a schoolboy?'"—*Guardian.*

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

GLOBE LIBRARY—(*Continued*).

GOLDSMITH'S MISCELLANEOUS WORKS. With Biographical Introduction, by Professor MASSON.

"Cheap, elegant, and complete."—*Nonconformist.*

SPENSER'S COMPLETE WORKS. Edited, with Glossary, by R. MORRIS, and Memoir, by J. W. WALES.

"Worthy—and higher praise it needs not—of the beautiful Globe Series."—*Daily News.*

POPE'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with Notes and Introductory Memoir, by PROFESSOR WARD.

"The book is handsome and handy.—*Athenæum.*

DRYDEN'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with a Revised Text and Notes, by W. D. CHRISTIE, M.A., Trinity College, Cambridge.

"It is hardly possible that a better or more handy edition of this poet could be produced."—*Athenæum.*

COWPER'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with Notes and Biographical Introduction, by W. BENHAM, M.A., Professor of Modern History in Queen's College, London.

"An Edition of permanent value. Altogether a very excellent book."—*Saturday Review.*

VIRGIL'S WORKS. Rendered into English Prose. With Introductions, Notes, Analysis, and Index, by J. LONSDALE, M.A. and S. LEE, M.A.

"A more complete edition of Virgil in English it is scarcely possible to conceive than the scholarly work before us."—*Globe.*

HORACE. Rendered into English Prose. With Reviewing Analysis, Introduction, and Notes, by J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A.

"This charming version is the closest and most faithful of all renderings of Horace into English."—*Record.*

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
3 9015 00499 1637
UNIV. OF MICH
LIBRA
Reviewed by Preservation
1998
Digitized by Google